



我的美女 总裁老婆

霉干菜烧饼◎



我的美女 总裁老婆

霉干菜烧饼◎

My Wife is a Beautiful CEO 51 to 100

Table of Contents



1. [My Wife is a Beautiful CEO 51 to 100](#)
 1. [Chapter 51: Returning With A Cloud Of Dust](#)
 2. [Chapter 52: It's Your Turn](#)
 3. [Chapter 53: Half A Month](#)
 4. [Chapter 54: Best Friend](#)
 5. [Chapter 55: Young Master Is Wise](#)
 6. [Chapter 56: That'd Be Very Difficult](#)
 7. [Chapter 57: What A Coincidence](#)
 8. [Chapter 58: I Will Help You Get Used To It](#)
 9. [Chapter 59: My Princess](#)
 10. [Chapter 60: I'm Not Alone In This Dao](#)
 11. [Chapter 61: I Do Not Intend To Sing An English Song](#)
 12. [Chapter 62: Both Weird People](#)
 13. [Chapter 63: Sure knows how to pick a place](#)
 14. [Chapter 64: Your attitude isn't friendly enough](#)
 15. [Chapter 65: Shooting a great art film](#)
 16. [Chapter 66 So what if I saw all of it](#)
 17. [Chapter 67: The reason for not recognizing](#)
 18. [Chapter 68: Casual Person](#)
 19. [Chapter 69: Just who are you](#)
 20. [Chapter 70: Don't worship me too much](#)
 21. [Chapter 71: This tactic is a little too cruel](#)
 22. [Chapter 72: Such an honorable husband](#)
 23. [Chapter 73: Can I hug you](#)
 24. [Chapter 74: An unwelcome visitor](#)
 25. [Chapter 75: Hubby I'm scared](#)
 26. [Chapter 75-2: Hubby I'm scared](#)
 27. [Chapter 76: Pregnant Teenager](#)

28. [Chapter 77 : Abnormality of the PR Department](#)
29. [Chapter 78-1: First time in life](#)
30. [Chapter 78-2: First time in life](#)
31. [Chapter 79: Receiving Guests](#)
32. [Chapter 80: Talk about that in the next life](#)
33. [Chapter 81: You're not even fart](#)
34. [Chapter 82: Train Station](#)
35. [Chapter 83: My first time](#)
36. [Chapter 84: Hanny](#)
37. [Chapter 85: Flower Rain](#)
38. [Chapter 86: This is more like you](#)
39. [Chapter 87: Will you support me](#)
40. [Chapter 88: Knight who draws his sword and charges into battle](#)
41. [Chapter 89: Please undress me](#)
42. [Chapter 90: Assets worth over a hundred million](#)
43. [Chapter 91: Something like this](#)
44. [Chapter 92: They may all get lost](#)
45. [Chapter 93: Failure of a man](#)
46. [Chapter 94: Quickly give it to me](#)
47. [Chapter 95: Grass that bends with the wind](#)
48. [Chapter 96: Life in the future](#)
49. [Chapter 97: The Eagle Shooting Heroes](#)
50. [Chapter 98: Isn't playing tennis](#)
51. [Chapter 99: A rather long story](#)
52. [Chapter 100: It's my honor to tell you](#)

Chapter 51: Returning With A Cloud Of Dust

Yang Chen's keen nerves had him immediately start the car, and step on the accelerator. The M3 roared as it dashed out of the basement carpark.

Several of Yu Lei International's security guards stared blankly at the silhouette of the car disappearing off into the distance, and looked amongst themselves in confusion. None of them knew which of the big figures in the company had such skill in driving cars.

While driving, Yang Chen asked, "What happened, Wang Ma?"

"The moment Miss got off work and returned home, Master came, and they're now quarreling outside....." Wang Ma spoke with a sobbing tone, "Young Master please hurry on back, Master even brought a large number of people back, they don't seem like good people, I'm afraid that they will harm Mi....."

Before Wang Ma finished speaking, a knocking noise came from the other side of the line. Immediately after, a familiar male voice entered Yang Chen's ears.....

"You're the stinking brat with the surname Yang right? I am Lin Kun, I'm right here waiting for you. If you have the guts come here at once!"

Yang Chen's hand which was holding the steering wheel immediately had its veins pop out, he could clearly hear Wang Ma's wailing on the other side of the line. It was obvious that her phone had been forcibly snatched away.

"Do you know what you are doing?"

"I'm very clear of it. You with the surname Yang, if you have the guts, get over here now. I want to see what abilities you, a mutton skewer selling bastard have that made my Lin family's little slut do such unfilial things!"

Yang Chen didn't speak further, he expressionlessly cut the call. Fact is, if this phone wasn't a gift from Lin Ruoxi, he might have already crushed it into pieces.

In a flash the accelerator was floored, although it was peak hour with highly congested traffic, the roaring engine made a substantial number of cars obediently give way.

The white BMW blew past like a hurricane, provoking a countless number of rebukes, but all of these didn't matter to Yang Chen. At that moment, in Yang Chen's eyes there was only a straight path, there were no traffic laws, no traffic lights, what he wanted was speed, speed and more speed!

On the route which usually required more than 20 minutes, Yang Chen, like a missile, had spent less than 10 minutes to reach his destination.

In front of the villa, the car came to a screeching halt, throwing up a cloud of smoke and dust.

At that moment, it was already dusk. The waning golden light scattered across the spacious and top grade villa area of Dragon Garden. This caused the trees to reflect a hint of red, while causing the grass to appear like a river of gold, and the landscape to be exceptionally beautiful.

But Yang Chen simply didn't have the mood to appreciate this rare view. After getting out the car, he walked towards the villa's main door with a grave expression.

Before Yang Chen had reached the door, it was vigorously opened. The figure of Lin Kun, with an upright posture and in a suit came walking out, his face that originally looked smart and mature instead seemed shady and excited in this moment. It was as if he could foresee that he would be able to take revenge against Yang Chen for the humiliation he brought onto him.

Behind him, were 5 young men that wore identical clothing; black tight short-sleeved shirts. From their bulging muscles it wasn't difficult to tell that they had unordinary combat skills.

"Haha. Bastard, you really have the guts to come back here, I thought you were frightened to the point of being too afraid to return." Lin Kun slanted his head, raising the corner of his eye. His eyes revealed deep hatred from within.

Yang Chen sighed.

It seems like my temperament has indeed mellowed. Otherwise, simply based on that line of profanity from him, there would have been enough reason to slice off his tongue.

Unenthusiastically, he stared at Lin Kun and asked, "Where is Ruoxi and Wang

Ma.....?”

The moment those words were spoken, two figures walked out from the villa's door.

“Young Master, Young Master be careful!” By the door, Wang Ma who was wearing an apron supported the pale-faced Lin Ruoxi out.

Lin Ruoxi hadn't changed out of her office clothing, it was like her cool and radiating pretty face had lost its soul. Her gaze was gloomy, her hair seemed messy, and she blankly stared at the floor without any focus, as if everything that was happening in front of her eyes was of no relation to her.

If one was to say this scene of Ruoxi made Yang Chen feel some pain in his heart, then the red handprint on Wang Ma's face instead made a murderous look flash through Yang Chen's eyes.....

It was a pity, Lin Kun evidently didn't notice such a change in Yang Chen's expression.

“Brat that sells mutton skewers, let me tell you, since you returned here today, you asked for it. My brothers' fists and kicks have no eyes, if you wish to receive less of a beating, then kneel on the ground and kowtow to me dozens of times, then lick my leather shoes clean, and obediently walk into the garbage bin. Perhaps I would let you off with that, and let you get lost!” Lin Kun laughed weirdly, his voice seemed to include traces of madness.

“Lin Kun.....” Yang Chen raised his head, and coldly gazed at this insolent man in front of his eyes, “I seem to have told you before, I as a person, hate being threatened the most. You can threaten me, but you better be prepared to bear the consequences of it.”

“I'm threatening you! Bastard! What can you do!? Do you have the ability to knock down these 5 brothers of mine!?” From anger into laughter, Lin Kun roared out.

Yang Chen didn't speak more, step by step he closed in onto Lin Kun.

The 5 hired thugs obviously didn't take Yang Chen seriously, after all, judging solely by appearance, this youngster simply didn't have the strength to retaliate. So when they saw Yang Chen approaching, only a single man walked forward, he

looked at Yang Chen with contempt while walking towards Yang Chen.

Yang Chen was too lazy to look at the black-clothed man blocking the way, seeing the black-clothed man raise his arms and swing his fist at high speed, as if it went through precise calculations, Yang Chen also swung a fist to receive it!

“Bam!”

The two fists collided, and a cracking sound actually came from it, but the result that emerged was something that left everybody present incomparably shocked!

“OWW!!”

The man who took the initiative to raise his fists had a warped expression, he hugged the fist he swung, and kneeled onto the ground in pain!

“Hand.....Hand.....” Bean sized drops of sweat dripped down, the man actually felt that all the bones in his whole arm were smashed into pieces. After feeling the severe waves of pain from it, he fainted on the spot!

Before the remaining 4 thugs seemed to have gained awareness of the situation, Yang Chen had already walked forward.

“Quickly! Quickly go up and fight!” Lin Kun felt that something was amiss, and commanded them in a flurry.

Only then did the 4 men fiendishly launch their kicks at Yang Chen, intending to bring Yang Chen down onto the ground.

But when the 4 men’s attacks landed on Yang Chen’s body, they suddenly realized, it didn’t matter whether the kick landed on Yang Chen’s chest, stomach, thigh or wherever, the attacks didn’t even make Yang Chen’s body flinch, as if their kicks landed on a thick and heavy iron plate, or a gigantic boulder, their strength was simply insufficient to cause any form of harm towards this monster!

The 4 men immediately had their backs full of cold sweat.

This fella, is his body made of steel?!

Yang Chen’s gaze had been rigidly set on Lin Kun in front. After receiving the attacks, he casually raised his hands formed into the shape of knives. The 4

pitiful hired thugs basically didn't have any chance to launch another attack or jump away before they felt their vision turn blurry, every single one of them had their nape fiercely struck with a chop!

What the others saw seemed to be just Yang Chen's figure gently wafting past, when the 4 originally healthy and robust men fell onto the ground, unconscious.

At this moment, Lin Kun feels a wave of regret bubbling inside him, however he doesn't feel that it is a mistake to take revenge against Yang Chen. He instead feels that he should've asked 'the person' helping him for a few more helpers!

§

Chapter 52: It's Your Turn

"It's your turn." Yang Chen stood face to face with Lin Kun, looking at Lin Kun the same way a butcher looked at a piece of meat on the chopping block. Tranquilly he asked, "Do you want a broken leg or a broken arm? If you wanna die, I could also help you with that."

He isn't joking!

Only then did Lin Kun react, because this was the first time he felt murderous intent from somebody's eyes, stark naked and true murderous intent!

He will really kill me!

"You..... You..... Stay away....." Lin Kun was afraid and slowly retreated trying to gain some distance from Yang Chen, but behind him was the staircase and the villa's main door.

Suddenly, Lin Kun turned his head, looked at the blank and emotionless Lin Ruoxi, and loudly shouted, "Little slut! This wild man of yours wants to break your father's legs! Aren't you going to discipline him!?"

Just after he said that, he felt a hand akin to a pair of steel pliers grip onto his chin. A voice so cold that it felt like metal that had been cooled in the snow traveled to his eardrums, "Your mouth really stinks, perhaps I should first cut off your tongue, put it back into your mouth, then sew your mouth shut..... When you get hungry, you can only eat your own tongue..... Tell me, what do you think about this idea?"

"Wu!! Wu Wu!!"

Lin Kun was so frightened that his face turned ashen and his eyes opened wide. But if he struggled even for a smidgen, Yang Chen's hand that gripped onto his chin would exert a lot more strength, he was already in so much pain that he didn't dare to move an inch.

At this moment, Lin Ruoxi who stood by the door slowly raised her head, a little bit of luster had finally returned to her beautiful spiritless eyes. She looked

at Yang Chen with incomparably complicated emotions, then glanced at Lin Kun who looked like he was about to pee in his pants, dispiritedly she said, “Yang Chen, let him go, don’t scare him anymore.....”

Lin Ruoxi’s tone wasn’t as cold and indifferent as usual, she spoke very lightly, but it was exactly a line like that, which somehow managed to appease Yang Chen’s scorching hot anger.

She resembles that person too much.....

Yang Chen was a little helpless, the figure that he deliberately tried to forget flashed through his mind, leaving him momentarily entranced.

Yang Chen released his hand, and Lin Kun who was in pain felt unresigned while fearfully dodging to the side, he carefully looked at Yang Chen, while gasping heavily.

“Dad, it was Xu Zhihong that had you come, right? These people should have also been given to you by him.” Lin Ruoxi calmly looked at Lin Kun, and lightly asked.

Lin Kun’s face revealed malevolence, and he glared at Yang Chen with hatred, “So what if that’s the case! Young Master Xu is helping me get rid of this bastard! This kind of asshole wants to plunder the assets of our Lin Family, I’ll definitely never agree to this!”

“Dad.....” Lin Ruoxi mournfully called out, with pain in her eyes, “Dad, don’t you know you are just being used by the Xu family? You are helping Xu Zhihong create trouble for me! Do you know what kind of poor state the company is in now!? Dad..... Please sober up a little! Xu Zhihong is totally different from who you think he is!”

“Nonsense!!” Lin Kun roared, “You little slut! Don’t pretend to have good intentions, don’t think that just because you call me ‘Dad’ that I will believe that an unfilial woman like you is kind! If you really wanted the best for me from the bottom of your heart, then at that time you shouldn’t have snatched away everything that belonged to me!! I should be the legitimate successor of Yu Lei!! If it wasn’t for you playing tricks, why did that dead old woman suddenly change her will, and hand Yu Lei International to a 20-year old little baby!”

Lin Ruoxi's legs staggered, if she wasn't supported by Wang Ma, she would've fallen long ago. Her complexion turned increasingly pale and helpless, and she finally couldn't hold back the tears from pouring down, "Dad..... How can you think this way..... She is my grandmother, your mother....."

"Then how should I think!? I want you to marry Young Master Xu, yet you refused a thousand times! Isn't it just because you're afraid that after marriage the position of Yu Lei's CEO will change owners!? Otherwise, based on Young Master Xu's qualifications, why would a slut like you who fakes being noble and virtuous refuse!?" Lin Kun's rage turned into laughter, "Hahahaha! I hit the mark, do you feel so ashamed that you want to kill yourself!?"

Lin Ruoxi could only feel the sky spin and the earth twist, even breathing had become difficult, it was as if her organs were submerged in quicksilver. Sparkling tears flowed out of her eyes like water from a dam burst and fell onto the ground.

At that moment, the always cool and noble queen-like lady couldn't help but cry, she even cried with such grievance. Lin Ruoxi covered her face with her hands as she sobbed, and the sobs drowned the words she spoke.

"When Mom left this world, you didn't even come home to take a look because of a lover you had outside..... When Grandma left this world, you waited for her to enter the coffin before you made your appearance, and only asked about matters of inheritance..... From my memories, other than living a life of debauchery outside, and asking Grandma for money, you basically showed no interest in the company's matters..... How can Grandma feel at ease leaving the company to you....." In pain, Lin Ruoxi looked at Lin Kun, bit her lip and said, "Dad, do you not understand what you're doing!?"

Lin Kun's face looked sinister as he coldly said, "I did all that because they forced me to! If it wasn't for those two women who ought to have died long ago holding me back, would I need to lower my head and beg them for money!? There was obviously so many company shares, why did I only receive such a small amount of money!? I am the family's only man, shouldn't I be the one calling the shots!? A slut like you only knows how to find excuses! Excuses! Excuses!!!"

"Your words are really the same as farts....."

Yang Chen truly found it hard to listen further, he really didn't understand how a woman like Lin Ruoxi could have such a retarded and insane father. Perhaps it was heaven messing with people, or it could be that hateful people had to be pitiful as well.

In a flash, Yang Chen's hand had grabbed onto Lin Kun's neck, he exerted a little strength and Lin Kun's face flushed from being unable to breathe. Lin Kun's body erratically jerked, but was unable to break free.

"If this was handled my way, you would've died at least 7 or 8 times today....." Said Yang Chen indifferently, he looked towards the slightly nervous-looking Lin Ruoxi by the door, then said, "However, in the end my wife is more softhearted, if I killed a father like you, she definitely wouldn't forgive me easily."

With that said, Yang Chen released his grip on Lin Kun's neck, but followed up with a lightning quick chop at Lin Kun's nape!

Lin Kun's eyes rolled over, and he immediately fainted onto the ground.

"Yang Chen! You..... What did you do to him?" Lin Ruoxi was still worried as she walked over, and squatted down to check for breathing from Lin Kun's nose, confirming that he didn't die, she sighed a breath of relief.

Anyhow, blood was thicker than water.

"Leave him to me." Yang Chen stooped down and placed Lin Kun's body on his shoulder, then he walked towards the nearby garbage bin.

Lin Ruoxi panicked, and hurriedly stopped him, "Don't, don't throw him in, this is enough....."

"I didn't cripple or kill him, that is already giving you a lot of face. He treats you like that, yet you still think of him as your father, I'm speechless. However, I hope you also consider my feelings, no matter what you think in your heart, as of right now, I am your husband."

Yang Chen's tone was flat and dull, but every word was like a law that didn't allow disobedience. With that all said, he directly walked towards the garbage bin.

Right now I am your husband!

Right now I am your husband!!

Lin Ruoxi's arms hung loose as she stood in the same place as if her soul left her, gazing at Yang Chen's back without a word.

After Yang Chen once again threw Lin Kun's body into the garbage bin, he heard Wang Ma shouting just as he was about to turn around.....

“Miss!!”

§

Chapter 53: Half A Month

Midsummer's night descended late, enveloping the city of Zhong Hai with what seemed to be gentle darkness, only the dazzling neon lights allowed the pedestrians to see each other's faces.

Along the bi-directional 8 lane highway encircling the city, one could see the countless traffic that looked like shooting stars, some were entering the heart of the city, while some were leaving the oppressive concrete garden.

On the roadside greenery in the north of Zhong Hai and along the Yangtze river, were thinly spread street lights that had insects dancing around the lights. This was a quiet scene that was hard to come by, even though that moment still had the scorching heat like daytime.

Close by was the meandering river that seemed to have no end, like a belt of jade that fell from the firmament, mutually echoing with the Milky Way in the skies, and mirroring a long string of white buildings by the river.....

This was the most expensive hospital in Zhong Hai, the quiet and secluded environment let their patients recuperate better. But similarly, the bills that came with it were so high that ordinary folks would jump back in fright.

At this moment, in the hospital's Intensive Care department, on a spacious and serene corridor, Yang Chen and Wang Ma sat on a bench specially placed for people to wait, quietly waiting for something outside the Intensive Care Unit.

Yang Chen had remained taciturn for a long while, before he was finally a little impatient, and dug his hand into his pocket to extract a cigarette, but he suddenly remembered that this was a hospital, and could only put it back angrily. Sighing, he stood up, and paced back and forth.

"Young Master." Wang Ma's eyes were red, she had cried not too long ago, and spoke with worry, "Young Master, why haven't the doctors and nurses come out yet? Miss shouldn't have any life threatening issues right?"

"Don't worry, although I'm no doctor, I still have some medical knowledge.

Ruoxi will be fine.” Yang Chen consoled her. The scene of him sending Lin Ruoxi to the hospital in the evening replayed over in his mind, and he too had difficulties setting himself at ease.

Right after Yang Chen had dropped Lin Kun into the garbage bin, he turned around and immediately saw Lin Ruoxi’s legs turn weak as she stood on the lawn and fell onto the ground.

Like a bullet, Yang Chen sped towards Lin Ruoxi’s side and held her, and he noticed that she was unconscious!

His past experiences allowed him to remain calm, unlike the flustered Wang Ma. He calmly took out his phone, called for an ambulance, and carried Lin Ruoxi back into the house.

After a simple check, he discovered that Lin Ruoxi had a high fever, so he immediately had Wang Ma bring over a cold towel and other first-aid items, and took care of her until the ambulance came and brought her to the hospital.

Due to the string of incidents, Yang Chen’s heart was in a mess. Although this woman who was as cold as ice and who had no understanding of expressions never gave him a look with kindness or happiness, but once something like this happened to her, Yang Chen helplessly realized that he was truly worried for her from the bottom of his heart.

Is it because she resembles her too much? Or is it because she is my legal wife? Perhaps, it is only because of her.

While Yang Chen was in a state of emotional disorder, the Intensive Care Unit was opened, Wang Ma moved up to hold onto the doctor’s elbow and asked, “Doctor, how’s my family’s Miss?”

The doctor wore a soothing smile, “Don’t worry, the crucial time has passed, and the fever has been brought down, a good rest is needed next.”

“That’s good……That’s good……” Wang Ma was so happy that she shed tears again, “Thank you doctor.”

The doctor took a look at the information on his phone, and in a reserved manner he asked, “Excuse me, does Miss Lin have a lot of pressure from work recently?”

Wang Ma blanked for a moment, and honestly replied, “That’s right doctor, my family’s Miss has always been working very hard, however these days she works overnight frequently, is there a problem?”

“Miss Lin’s body is very weak, according to our diagnosis, it should be caused by excessive pressure from work, and psychological burdens.” The doctor frowned as he said, “This time’s fever is also because the body’s weak, and was suffering a cold. She mustn’t have had good sleep. At this rate, even if she’s fine this time, there will be repeat occurrences, and when that happens, this sickness will take its roots, and the body will be totally worn out.”

Wang Ma’s heart jumped up to her throat, “Doctor, what..... What can we do? My family’s Miss must be cured.....”

The doctor smiled and said, “Don’t worry, this isn’t too big of an illness, the patient only needs to go through a period of good rest. If she can stay in the hospital for about half a month and take chinese medicine to recuperate, then complete recovery is possible.”

Wang Ma revealed a distressed expression, “*Half a month*..... I’m afraid that Miss won’t agree .”

“She must agree.” Yang Chen dully inserted these words with a tone that did not allow negotiation. Then, to the doctor he said, “Doctor, other than recuperation through chinese medicine, what else needs to be done?”

“You are.....”

“I am Lin Ruoxi’s husband, my name’s Yang Chen.”

The doctor revealed astonishment, but immediately smiled and said, “Oh, I apologise, I had no idea Miss Lin was married. If Mr Yang has free time, you may accompany your wife to the hospital’s garden to breathe in some fresh air, the patient’s psychological burdens need to be stemmed as well, the recovery of the body is not enough.”

Yang Chen nodded, looking profound.

Taking control of a company like Yu Lei International that was the top of the pyramid in the fashion industry at such a young age, without any kin at home, while all her only living kin, her father does is create trouble without any kind of

contribution. In the business world she had to deal with so many sly enemies, yet her social life was so lonely and helpless. Moreover, being coveted by young masters of rich families like Xu Zhihong, for this woman to endure until now, she is worthy of reverence from the bottom of one's heart.

After seeing off some medical personnels, Wang Ma sighed, and said, "Young Master, since Miss must be hospitalized, then I'll go back to retrieve some essential items. It wouldn't be good if Miss wakes up and isn't able to get anything she needs."

"Thanks for your trouble Wang Ma." Yang Chen sincerely smiled. Actually, Lin Ruoxi wasn't completely alone, at least there was someone like Wang Ma who watched her grow up by her side, and took care of her.

Wang Ma shook her head, a little touched, "All I'm doing is little trivial matters. If it wasn't for Young Master, Miss might be forced into a dead end by Master. Young Master is the one who did something worth noting, for Miss to choose Young Master, that truly was a decision that cannot be more correct."

Unable to deny, Yang Chen laughed at himself, if it weren't for him truly having a skill or two, Lin Ruoxi would most likely be pushed into dire straits by Lin Kun. She coincidentally insisted on marrying him, and unexpectedly she struck "1st Prize" there.

After Wang Ma left, Yang Chen softly opened the wooden door of the ward, and entered it with gentle footsteps.

The room was dark, with only the bed lamp emitting a gentle glow which enveloped the pure white sickbed.

Lin Ruoxi's black hair was scattered all over, her usually cold and beautiful face now seemed weak. She was silent with closed eyes, and her breathing was normal, but her eyebrows were slightly wrinkled, as if she was having a bad dream.

Does she face problems even in her dreams?

Yang Chen sat down on a chair beside the bed. He gazed entranced at the unconscious woman in front of him while deep in thought.

Her figure, her face, and her character were all so similar to that person.....

Gradually, Yang Chen lost track of time.

Knock knock.

The ward's door was suddenly knocked twice, and before Yang Chen could turn his head, somebody had gently opened the door and walked in.

§

Chapter 54: Best Friend

The person who entered even breathed carefully, as if afraid of waking up Lin Ruoxi who slept on the bed.

Yang Chen knew from the footsteps that it wasn't Wang Ma, he puzzlingly turned around to look at the person who entered, and was flabbergasted.

"Why is it you!?"

Mo Qianni first asked in amazement, and widened her cute and limpid eyes, making her lovely and charming face seem extremely enticing under the gloomy lights.

"This is my question as well, why are you here?" Yang Chen frowned, after all the relationship between him and Lin Ruoxi had been confidential; if Mo Qianni finds out, it might bring many unnecessary troubles to the both of them.

While the 2 of them were still bewildered, the door once again opened. Wang Ma dragged in a suitcase, wore a smile and said, "Miss Mo, this is the Young Master I mentioned, it is all because of Young Master that Miss was able to hold out till now."

"Wang Ma....." Mo Qianni pointed at Yang Chen with disbelief, and nearly cried out from the shock, "You..... You're saying Yang Chen is Ruoxi's husband!?"

"Why, are you shocked?" Since Wang Ma already let the cat out of the bag, Yang Chen was no longer willing to pretend, he made an evil smile and asked, "Or you could say I hurt Miss Mo's heart, as she discovered that she lost her chance to have something happen between her and an outstanding man like me."

Spit! Mo Qianni clenched her teeth, panted with rage and said, "I'm just puzzled, why would Ruoxi suddenly marry you without a word, and even chose a rogue like you as her husband! You must have used some kind of trick or scheme!"

Wang Ma saw the two at each other's throats the moment they met, and hurriedly stopped them saying, "Alright alright, Miss Mo, Young Master, this is

still a ward, the two of you are the ones closest to Miss, it's better to argue less and be more amiable."

Yang Chen's mouth twitched, and he asked, "Wang Ma, why would you come here together with her?"

Wang Ma smiled and explained, "When I returned home to grab the suitcase, Miss Mo called to ask if Miss was home. Young Master may not know this, but Miss Mo and Miss have known each other for a long time. They were frequently together when Old Mistress was still alive. Now they are also working together in Yu Lei International. Which is why their relationship is very good, in the past she also came to eat in our house often, and only came less frequently after Old Mistress passed away. Which is why when Miss Mo asked about this, I didn't conceal the truth. When Miss Mo heard that Miss was hospitalized, she insisted on coming with me to see her."

It's unexpected that Mo Qianni and Lin Ruoxi were actually *best friends*. That's right, when he saw them in the company, he realized that his wife and his superior had a very good relationship, so it turns out that they were close privately.

"Then I'd like to thank you for your concern, Miss Mo. Ruoxi has already passed the dangerous period, if you feel tired, you may return home and sleep with ease.

Mo Qianni rolled her eyes at Yang Chen, although she still felt gloomy and annoyed that a person like this became the CEO's husband, this wasn't the time to discuss about such things. Walking to the side of the bed, she carefully examined Lin Ruoxi's pale face, and with worry she said, "If you want to sleep you can do that on your own, I want to stay here and accompany Ruoxi."

"It's not like she's your wife, what are you accompanying her for." Yang Chen joked.

"Fuck!" Mo Qianni blew her top, "You better not think highly of yourself just because you became Ruoxi's husband, we've known each other for 8 years, you don't know a thing!"

"All I know is, if you continue speaking so loudly, my darling wife is going to be woken up by you." Yang Chen helpless made a gesture telling her to be silent.

Mo Qianni immediately covered her mouth, stared at Yang Chen and spoke softly, “I finally understand why Ruoxi was so firmly against firing you, as it turns out you cannot be fired.....”

“That is me being serious, responsible and capable.” Yang Chen winked at Mo Qianni, “Miss Mo, don’t forget to give me a bonus at the end of the month, I managed to recover 400,000 dollars.”

Bringing up this matter, a pit of fire reignited in Mo Qianni’s heart, she coldly snorted, and no longer paid attention to Yang Chen. She pulled a chair over and sat by the bed as well, and didn’t speak a word more.

Wang Ma who was in the corner sorting out her things saw this scene and could only sigh.

A silent night, with the moonlight like a clear spring cascading through the ward’s window, seeming comfortable and serene.

It was already midnight, Wang Ma who had finished sorting out the clothes and other essential items hesitated for a long time before deciding to return to the villa at Dragon Garden to wait. After all, someone had to look after such a big house, and conduct various chores. Moreover, there were specialized nursing personnel in the hospital. She could also accompany Lin Ruoxi during the day, so staying overnight wasn’t really necessary.

In the ward, other than Lin Ruoxi who was sleeping soundly, there was only Yang Chen and Mo Qianni who sat on opposite sides of the bed, keeping silent.

After some time passed, Mo Qianni truly couldn’t endure the dead atmosphere and said, “How did you get married with Ruoxi, she never said a word about this to me before.”

“We originally intended to keep it under wraps, but since you’ve already found out, I hope you won’t reveal this to anybody.” Said Yang Chen.

“I’m no gossip girl. I’m more of a sister to Ruoxi.” Mo Qianni was somewhat dissatisfied, “In contrast, you suddenly appeared and became Ruoxi’s husband, is it because you used some immoral scheme?”

Yang Chen laughed, “From what Wang Ma said, the two of you knew each other since young, you should be more familiar with her than me, right?”

“That’s right.” Mo Qianni said, “When I was young, it was Ruoxi’s granny, who was also the previous CEO that helped me, which is why I am who I am today. Ruoxi is my dear sister, and also my benefactor’s flesh and blood, I definitely won’t allow anybody to harm her!”

Yang Chen ignored Mo Qianni’s gaze which was full of wariness, and continued by saying, “Since the two of you have known each other for so long, who do you think is more intelligent, you or her?”

“She’s smarter.” Mo Qianni was very upfront, she rolled her eyes at Yang Chen and said, “Although I don’t really like to admit it, but since young till now, she has always been a cut above me in everything we do. All I want is to do my part, and help share her burdens in work.”

“Then do you think that she wouldn’t think of what you are able to come up with? For us to get married, I had my own reasons and she had hers, it’s none of your business.” Said Yang Chen.

Mo Qianni clenched her teeth and said, “If you don’t want to say it then don’t, you’re full of fallacious reasoning, and you curse without vulgarities. You better not think that I can’t manage you just because you’re Ruoxi’s husband, I’m still your superior!”

“All I do is play some high IQ games, and chat with your sisters during my leisure time. Let me give you some advice for your own mental well-being, if you don’t give me trouble, I would be too lazy to bother you.” Yang Chen shook his head and stood up, “It’s already late, I still have things to do tomorrow, Miss Mo, if you wish to go home I can give you a lift, but if you wish to continue staying, remember not to catch a cold.” With that said, he wore a weird smile as he glanced at Lin Ruoxi, and walked out of the room without turning back.

Mo Qianni swung her little fist behind Yang Chen, she wanted to stamp her feet and curse a little, but in the end she still endured.

Not long after Yang Chen left, Mo Qianni made a long sigh, she felt that it wasn’t worth getting angry over a person like that, and extended her hand to hold Lin Ruoxi’s. She softly muttered to herself, “Ruoxi, why did you choose a rogue like this as your husband, even if it’s to put up a signboard and cheat others, you don’t need to torment yourself like that, right.....?”

“Actually it’s still alright.....”

Mo Qianni was stunned, she raised her head to look. It was unclear when Lin Ruoxi opened her eyes. Although Lin Ruoxi had a tired complexion, she still woke up, and looked at her gently.

“Ruoxi you’re awake? When did you wake up?” Mo Qianni was pleasantly surprised.

Lin Ruoxi weakly revealed a slight smile, obviously extremely intimate with a rare friend like Mo Qianni, “He left, so I woke up.”

“Could it be that you’ve long been awake, and deliberately waited for him to leave?” Mo Qianni didn’t know whether to laugh or to cry.

“If he’s here, I don’t dare to wake up.” A complicated expression flashed through Lin Ruoxi’s eyes, she didn’t speak more after that, and closed her eyes to recuperate.

Chapter 55: Young Master Is Wise

At night, in Zhong Hai's Xu family's brightly lit huge villa; surrounded by large gardens and alleys, with security personnel patrolling everywhere.

In a Baroque-styled room that was relatively dim, Xu Zhihong who wore a black pajamas sat by a bar counter, and poured himself a glass of Lafite red wine. He raised it and swirled it a few times, before he took a sip, the sound of knocking was heard from the door.

"Enter." Xu Zhihong creased his eyebrows.

Hairy Ball happily walked in wearing a t-shirt that was washed till it lost color and a pair of holey jeans. The beard on his face looked as if it hadn't been shaved for weeks, while his body odor could be smelt from far away.

"How many times have I told you this, the door is an art piece. If you want to enter, shout." Xu Zhihong felt helpless towards this subordinate of his.

Hairy Ball laughed and said, "I was too excited, and forgot this matter."

"You never remembered it before." Xu Zhihong glared at Hairy Ball.

Hairy Ball's mood became deflated, and he subconsciously scratched his oily head, "Young Master, do you know what I saw today?"

Xu Zhihong walked to the window, and dully said, "Don't beat around the bush."

"You're so unhumorous, no wonder you can't pick up that little girl with the surname Lin....." Hairy Ball murmured, then said, "Lin Kun came to visit, he asked for help to deal with that Yang Chen, I wanted to take advantage of that situation, and lent him 5 retired soldiers. Unexpectedly, those 5 people were put down by Yang Chen alone today. That Lin Kun was thrown into the garbage bin again! Don't you think it's funny, Young Master? Haha! That is his father-in-law, and he threw him into the garbage bin twice!"

Xu Zhihong swirled the wine glass in his hand, contemplated for a moment, and said, “Seems like this Yang Chen’s truly not simple. It’s a pity that there’s so little information on him, it’s too difficult to understand him.”

Hairy Ball spoke a line in ridicule, “It can’t be that Young Master is afraid, right?”

“Afraid?” Xu Zhihong coldly smiled, “All he knows how to do is a few punches and kicks, and speak with a rogue tongue. Why would I be afraid of him? A crouching tiger can’t deal with a hidden dragon. He’s a small character that returned from overseas a little more than half a year ago, is it possible that he can overturn the heavens?”

“Then how about I go deal with him now, I heard the few useless henchmen say that his movements were very fast, my hands are itching right now.” Said Hairy Ball excitedly.

Xu Zhihong shook his head, “No need, regarding this matter, we shan’t meddle in it temporarily. To speak of how Lin Ruoxi is like normally, she probably doesn’t even know herself. In this city, she might not be the most intelligent woman, and might not be the most low-key woman, but she is definitely one of the most dangerous women. Don’t push her over the edge and force her to do things that she doesn’t want to do.

“Young Master, you’ve always looked at Miss Lin with such importance, just what capabilities does she have?” Hairy Balls puzzlingly asked.

Xu Zhihong sipped a little of the red wine, “Actually I’m not entirely sure as well, but it’s never wrong to be more careful. As for the matter regarding Yang Chen, you need not worry, for we don’t need to do anything. That brainless Lin Kun definitely won’t let this matter rest.”

“Young Master is wise!”

“Boot-lick less! Get the hell out of my room and take a shower!”

“Actually I just bathed last week.....”

o

At dawn, on the next day, Yang Chen drove his car to the west region’s food

market to procure breakfast.

As expected, Old Li as before set up his stall at his usual spot, with a happy face. It seemed like he was in a very good mood, it seemed like he learned of what happened to the Chen family's father and son, and been released of all the burdens in his heart. Seeing Yang Chen walk over, he smiled and greeted, "Little Yang you've come, I heard from the others that you've started working at a company. That's great, that seems more like something a youngster should do."

"Both jobs are work, there isn't much of a difference." Yang Chen smiled and said, "It's a pity that in the future I won't have much time to boast and idly chat with you guys, working in an office is actually less comfortable."

Old Li mischievously smiled and said, "That little girl Jingjing was very cheerful last night, did you say something to her?"

Yang Chen pondered for a moment, and said, "I promised to visit her in her school today."

Old Li had an expression of sudden enlightenment, he patted Yang Chen's shoulders, "Young people should get together well, my family's Jingjing has a very pure character, you better not let her suffer, otherwise I won't forgive you!"

Seeing Old Li's "I knew it" expression, Yang Chen wanted to explain, but the words that went up to his throat was too difficult to say, so he could only swallow it back in and awkwardly nod.

Once again bringing in various bags of breakfast to the office, the group of PR Department ladies had already raised their heads in longing, seeing the myriad of breakfasts, they once again sang praises at Yang Chen.

Soon after Yang Chen sat on his chair, he felt the urge to turn on his computer and begin a new day of his "professional gaming" career, but saw Mo Qianni who had a tired expression enter the office.

Mo Qianni glanced at Yang Chen, saw the remainders of a big bag of youtiao on Yang Chen's desk, and was immediately overwhelmed by anger.

This fella, as somebody's husband, his wife is in the hospital, yet he didn't attend to her, and instead bought a heap of breakfast for the ladies in the office.

She couldn't help but look at him with disdain and ridicule, "You're very considerate to your colleagues, and even do your best at buying breakfast. But I wonder if you will remember to bring some to a certain someone."

"Miss Mo wants some? It's alright, there's still a lot left." Yang Chen raised a meat bun in his hand, generously extending it to Mo Qianni.

"You know who I am talking about." Mo Qianni said softly.

Yang Chen helplessly laughed, "Ruoxi should be eating light and healthy food, Wang Ma would naturally send it after cooking. I can't possibly be bringing meat buns and youtiaos to a patient that needs to recuperate, right?"

"Heartless. You don't need to find excuses."

Although this explanation was very reasonable, Mo Qianni didn't accept it.

Discovering that this woman's prejudice against himself was already humongous, Yang Chen didn't plan on wasting his efforts trying to please her. He shrugged his shoulders, put the bun into his mouth and began to eat it.

Mo Qianni had accompanied Lin Ruoxi all night at the hospital, and she was hungry. After smelling the aroma in the office, her stomach rumbled in hunger. Seeing Yang Chen take back the meat bun, made her even madder, and cursed Yang Chen for being petty and tactless. She quickly reached out and grabbed a bag of steamed dumplings from the table and breeze walked into her office.

"Hungry yet still tries to argue." Yang Chen whispered as he laughed.

When it was lunch time, Yang Chen gracefully declined the three ladies' invitation to eat lunch together, and drove to the hospital.

During the day, Zhong Hai First Hospital was rather cold, after all the hospital was big, yet the patients were few, however this was perfectly suited for patients to convalesce.

Yang Chen followed the path to Lin Ruoxi's ward; the door was opened, and voices transmitted outwards from the inside. Walking closer and taking a careful look, it was the two "acquaintances" from two days ago.

"Ruoxi, I have good relations with this hospital's chairman, how about I have them give you the best nursing ward, take this as my little gift.

Lin Ruoxi leaned against the pure white pillow, her ice mountain-like fair face looked out of the window and at the sky, and clearly said, "Not necessary, thank you for visiting me."

"Ruoxi, these words are too cold, if it wasn't because I have been rather busy recently, I would accompany you in the hospital more. Actually for people like us, this type of peaceful contact is what we lack." Said Xu Zhihong with some regret.

This time Lin Ruoxi wasn't even interested in replying, as if nothing was heard, she stared blankly out of the window.

Wang Ma who was at the side cleaning up the breakfast utensils felt that the silent atmosphere of the room was too awkward, and was just about to speak some polite words on behalf of Lin Ruoxi when she saw Yang Chen standing at the entrance of the ward. She immediately revealed a relieved smile and said, "Young Master, you're here."

Chapter 56: That'd Be Very Difficult

Yang Chen smiled and nodded towards Wang Ma, then turned to speak to Xu Zhihong, “Young Master Xu is really diligent, you came even earlier than I, her husband.”

Xu Zhihong seemed unfazed as he smiled amiably and said, “Mr Yang sure knows how to crack a joke. The friendship between Ruoxi and I has lasted for years; I hurried over once I heard she fell sick.”

“Oh.....” Yang Chen had an expression of enlightenment, then moved forward with a strange smile and said, “Since Young Master came to visit, you must have brought something like a visiting gift, right?”

Xu Zhihong inwardly cursed “shameless” and said, “I only brought some fruits.” He pointed at the fruit basket on the side table, “I know Ruoxi doesn’t like extravagance, so I brought something simple to represent my heartfelt wishes.”

Yang Chen walked to the basket and picked up a red apple. He weighed it in his hand, and spoke in disappointment, “It’s a real apple huh.”

Xu Zhihong puzzlingly asked, “Of course it’s a real apple, what do you mean by that, Mr Yang?”

“Hehe.” Yang Chen regretfully said, “I thought that for a rich man like Young Master Xu, the apples sent by you would be made of gold. Who knew that it would be just an ordinary apple, without any meaning to it.”

Xu Zhihong could only feel his lungs expand. *How is this man’s brain grown!? Golden apple!?*

Wicked guy! Lowly person! Rogue!

“Mr Yang sure knows how to make jokes, haha.” Said Xu Zhihong as he laughed forcibly.

Lin Ruoxi who sat on the bed kept refusing to turn her head to look at the 2 men, yet at this moment she faintly glanced at them. Seeing the appearance of

Xu Zhihong forcibly laughing, her lips moved slightly.

If it wasn't for taking into consideration the Xu family's might and their business cooperations, Lin Ruoxi hoped that Xu Zhihong would disappear from this world. After all if it wasn't for him pushing Lin Kun, Lin Kun wouldn't make such a mess out of things. He caused her originally exhausted heart to become even more haggard, which was why she is on the hospital bed now.

It was a pity that it was impossible for her to do something overboard to Xu Zhihong. This was why in a sense, Yang Chen's actions were what Lin Ruoxi wished to see.

It seemed that Yang Chen didn't plan to leave the matter at that, he waved his hand and said, "I'm aware of Great Young Master Xu's capabilities, something like a gold apple definitely isn't a difficult thing, it's just a question of whether Young Master Xu is willing. Although something this expensive isn't much to Young Master Xu, in the end it isn't good to casually give it to people you're not close to. Therefore us husband and wife will not insist for it, we are deeply grateful to Young Master Xu for giving us a real apple."

After speaking, Yang Chen grabbed a tissue, wiped the apple in his hand, and took a big bite out of it. In an enjoyed manner he said, "Not bad, very sweet, Young Master Xu is even good at picking apples, looks like it wouldn't be a bad choice if someday you switched your job to a fruit farmer."

Xu Zhihong nearly fainted from anger, he had met shameless people before, but has never met someone this shameless! Being spoken to by this rogue, and in a few words he became a miser, a scrooge, a selfish person, and..... And even became a fruit farmer.

I came to visit a patient! Not to receive a scolding!

Also, fuck that sweet apple! How can it possibly be picked by me!

Of course, Xu Zhihong wasn't stupid to the point where he would say "I had someone else buy the apple for me." Wouldn't that indicate that he lacked sincerity?

Realizing that he would go crazy if he continued staying, Xu Zhihong smiled with his skin but not his flesh as he said, "I still have a meeting this afternoon, so

I'll not disturb you from recovering. Ruoxi, I will come again to visit when I'm free." He immediately walked out of the room after he finished speaking.

Wang Ma who had been enduring for a long time finally couldn't hold back, and with a "Puchi" she laughed out, "Young Master you're really good at talking, that Xu family's Young Master would most likely be angry for days."

Yang Chen munched on the apple while saying, "He won't, if he really stayed angry for a long time over a matter like this, he would've given up on Ruoxi long ago."

"Sigh....." Wang Ma turned to look at Lin Ruoxi, who was so silent as if she wasn't in the room, "I'm going out for a while, Young Master should chat with Miss."

After the thoughtful Wang Ma left, Yang Chen annihilated the apple in his hand, and sat by Lin Ruoxi's bed. He smiled and said, "My good good wife, Ruoxi, this apple is pretty good, how about I peel one for you?"

Lin Ruoxi remained expressionless as she stared out of the window, as if she didn't hear anything.

Yang Chen nodded with satisfaction, "This time you didn't stop me from addressing you this way, there's improvement. Furthermore, you silently consented that you wanted to eat an apple, and even know how to act like a spoiled child, an even greater improvement. To reward you, I will personally peel an apple for you."

Although she had already gained knowledge and experienced the ways of this contracted husband many times over the past few days, in the end Lin Ruoxi still felt that she underestimated this fella.

I haven't even spoken half a sentence, and became a spoiled child!?

"Can't you speak in a more decent manner?" Lin Ruoxi sighed, and turned her head back. Hoping to speak with Yang Chen properly.

"Decent? I've always been decent. What is there indecent about a husband peeling an apple for his wife?" Yang Chen smiled as he took hold of a fruit knife, the shiny fruit knife in his hand consecutively spun in a beautiful 360 degrees, as if it was glued to his palm.

Lin Ruoxi didn't have the mood to speak anymore, but when she saw Yang Chen reveal this skill, she couldn't help but curiously watch him carefully.

Yang Chen grabbed an apple which looked good from the outside, and grasped the fruit knife in his other hand. After a brief pause, the fruit knife rapidly peeled the apple's skin.

Yang Chen's hand was very fast, so fast that Lin Ruoxi, who was in close proximity couldn't see his movements clearly. She could only see the small fruit knife turn into countless lights surrounding the apple and circling it for a short period of time.

It was like peeling an apple became a piece of art, just like a clay sculpture or a wood carving, where before the final moment, you wouldn't know the how the final result would turn out.

In less than 30 seconds, Yang Chen stopped moving his hands, and moved the peeled apple to Lin Ruoxi, "Here, your husband gives his wife a prize."

Lin Ruoxi looked at the peeled apple in front of her eyes, blankly stared for a moment, and soon felt an indescribable feeling well up in her heart. Unconsciously, she became silly.....

At that moment, the originally rosy apple lost most of its skin, but on the peeled apple, were some thin leftover skin, forming a few beautiful red words. — — "Wish Wife Good Health"

Lin Ruoxi noticed her eyes getting moist, and immediately controlled her emotions. She said, "You only know how to do such unorthodox and senseless things, even this apple you peeled is so sappy."

"Hehe." Yang Chen's thick skin blushed, "Actually I also feel it's a little sappy, so it's better that you quickly eat it, my good good wife. Do you want me to feed it to you?" With that said he moved the apple towards Lin Ruoxi's porcelain-like smooth lips.

"I'll do it myself." Lin Ruoxi quickly grabbed the apple off Yang Chen's hands, but when the apple was in front of her eyes, she saw the bright red words on the apple, and hesitated. She found it somewhat difficult to open her mouth.

Yang Chen said, "Is it difficult to bite off such a good looking apple? It's alright,

I can always peel another for my family's Ruoxi, but what should I write on it....."

"You need not let your imaginations run wild." Lin Ruoxi immediately replied, "I was just wondering whether you washed your hands."

Seeing Lin Ruoxi begin to nibble on the apple he peeled, Yang Chen didn't continue teasing her, and only felt that the way this ice mountain-like woman held the apple with both hands and nibbled on it looked pretty cute.

"Thank you." Lin Ruoxi suddenly spoke softly.

Yang Chen suspected that he heard wrongly, "What?"

"I said, thank you, thank you for everything you've done for me." Lin Ruoxi raised her head, with eyes like the clear autumn, "I realized that I don't hate you as much as before."

Yang Chen bitterly smiled, "You need not thank me, if one day you become fond of me and promote me from a temporary husband to a permanent one, I will thank the heavens."

Lin Ruoxi did not angry from those words, she instead pondered for a moment, and seriously replied, "*That'd be very difficult.*"

"....."

Chapter 57: What A Coincidence

The ice queen was after all the ice queen. Although she spoke a few sentences for the first time in forever, after those words were spoken she once again returned back to “Shut Down” mode.

Yang Chen judiciously left the ward. He felt hungry from not eating lunch and drove to a small restaurant to deal with it. He didn’t intend to return to the company and work. Instead, he asked for directions and left for Zhong Hai Yi Zhong to look for Li Jingjing.

[Note: Zhong Hai Yi Zhong is the name of the school Li Jingjing works at.]

With regards to that innocent girl, Yang Chen always felt distressed on how to handle the relationship between the two of them, he couldn’t bear to hurt her, and wasn’t willing to see her sad. But in the end, Yang Chen knew that he still hadn’t completely given up on Li Jingjing in his heart.

Men simply liked to find excuses to make themselves seem righteous.....

In Zhong Hai, Yi Zhong is considered one of the most elite school, so it could easily be found by simply asking the locals for directions.

After parking the car at the large outdoor car park in the school, Yang Chen got off the car, and realized that he had forgot to set a location for meeting up with Li Jingjing. However, he didn’t panic to make a phone call, since it’s always better to give a pleasant surprise.

Perhaps it was because they saw Yang Chen drive a BMW into the school, the security guards at the entrance didn’t obstruct him, and only glanced before amicably letting him pass.

Yi Zhong’s campus was fresh to Yang Chen. In fact, Yang Chen had never spent much time in school. The school’s orderly layout, the many wooden plaques of famous sayings, as well as the occasional teachers and students walking past with books, all these were completely fresh in Yang Chen’s eyes.

After asking an elderly teacher along the way, Yang Chen found the building

that was the teachers' office. Recalling that Li Jingjing teaches English, based on that clue, he quickly found the office which had the door with the sign "Li Jingjing" on it. Above it contained a picture of a girl wearing a smile, appearing to be brimming with youth.

After knocking on the door thrice, the words "please enter" came from the inside. It was precisely the familiar voice of Li Jingjing.

Yang Chen opened the door, and the first thing he saw was the two seated people. The first was naturally Li Jingjing with a long ponytail tied up, wearing a white short-sleeved blouse, and a pair of mid-length jean shorts that covered her thighs, looking fresh and beautiful.

The appearance of the other person astonished Yang Chen, it was actually the "Land Rover lady" he met by chance at that night, with hair that was long, sexy and wavy, a black suit that gave off a heavy impression of accomplishment, her smooth and fair feet stepped on a pair of crystal-like textured silver high heels. Sitting on the chair, her entire figure was like a meticulously sculpted piece of art.

The two ladies that had completely opposite styles yet were equally enchanting sat opposite of each other, and turned their heads to look at Yang Chen who was at the door at the same time. However, the expressions they revealed were completely different.

Li Jingjing's delight was displayed through her words as she stood up and called out "big brother Yang." She happily moved up and pulled Yang Chen into the office, and moved a chair for him to sit, "Why have you come so suddenly yet didn't give me a call?"

Yang Chen awkwardly laughed, and said, "A surprise, surprises are better." Then, he looked towards the lady that had an expression of enlightenment, "What a coincidence, we meet again."

"Yeah." Tang Wan sized Yang Chen up, then looked at the contented Li Jingjing, and a weird yet ambiguous smile appeared on her face, "So you are acquainted with Teacher Li?"

Li Jingjing curiously asked, "Miss Tang knows big brother Yang?"

“One fateful encounter.” Said Tang Wan, and she added-on, “Not familiar.”

Li Jingjing didn't think much of it, and nodded, “I never thought big brother Yang would come so suddenly, but since everybody is acquainted then it's fine. Please tell me if there's anything Miss Tang still wishes to know, or need me to help with.”

Tang Wan shook her head with a smile and said, “I have already disturbed Teacher Li by chatting for a long time, it's about time I returned to my office. Moreover, since Mr Yang is already here, if I still insist on staying, that would be too inconsiderate of me.” As she said that, she gave Yang Chen a profound look.

Yang Chen wouldn't dare look at this lady face to face. At that time, he made it clear that he wanted her to be his one night stand. The tragedy was that he failed, and now they met when he came to look for Li Jingjing, so it couldn't be helped that her thoughts drifted in that direction. As a result, he glanced all around the room, refusing to chat more with Tang Wan.

These words made Li Jingjing blush, but she felt sweetness in her heart, “Miss Tang is overthinking things, we are not in that kind of relationship.”

“Then let's leave it as me overthinking things.” Tang Wan didn't bluntly point out anything. She gracefully stood up and picked up her white Chanel handbag, “I would have to trouble Teacher Li with taking care of my daughter in the future. I shall take my leave now, thank you Teacher Li.”

“You're too courteous, goodbye Miss Tang.”

After seeing Tang Wan off, Yang Chen breathed a sigh of relief, thinking of the conversation before, he bafflingly asked, “Jingjing, that Miss Tang asked you to take care of her daughter?”

Li Jingjing nodded, smiling she said, “Yes, Miss Tang's daughter is in my class, and I am the new form teacher, so she came to chat with me regarding her daughter. Actually her daughter is pretty intelligent, and obtains good results. However, she is just too naughty, her previous form teachers were all rather worried, and made her change classes quite a number of times. Miss Tang was afraid that I would do the same, so she specially came to chat with me for a long time.”

“Oh.....” Yang Chen was a little shocked inside, he never thought that Tang Wan was someone who had a daughter because she looked so young. Since she was a mother, it’s no wonder he didn’t succeed that night.

Li Jingjing had no idea her “great big brother” had such thoughts, and continued saying, “I pity all the parents of the world, I think that educating children always require some patience. I plan to make some time to chat with that child. I feel that an intelligent girl like her would definitely understand her parents’ labors.”

Yang Chen nodded in approval, “That’s true, a person like me that never had a mother or father can’t endure the fact that someone is not contented despite having a mother’s love.”

“Big brother Yang, you’re not allowed to bring up this matter, it makes people sad.” Li Jingjing consoled.

“I, your big brother Yang, have been used to it long ago.” Yang Chen laughed, and stood up from the chair. He looked around at the refined office, “This truly deserves to be called an elite school, even the offices are so delightful.”

Li Jingjing felt cheerful hearing the praises, smiled and said, “This office is only used by me and another female teacher, sometimes I feel that it’s quite a waste.”

“My family’s little sister Li Jingjing has braved the cold for years, it’s no big deal for her to use an office like this.” Yang Chen teasingly said.

Li Jingjing pouted and said, “Big brother Yang, I’m not little anymore..... And also not some little sister..... According to age, I’m even the same age as you.....”

Yang Chen was stunned, and saw Li Jingjing’s pair of large innocent eyes staring at him. In his heart, he knew what this girl was thinking about, and he felt ashamed about it, but he didn’t know what to say.

Right at this moment, the office telephone rang.

Li Jingjing glanced at Yang Chen with bitterness once more, and proceeded to pick up the phone. After listening on the phone, she said, “Thank you, I got it.” Before hanging up.

“What’s going on? Did something happen?” Asked Yang Chen who immediately shifted from earlier’s topic.

Li Jingjing pursed her little lips bashfully, and looked at Yang Chen with anticipation, “Big brother Yang, can you accompany me to somewhere tonight?”

§

Chapter 58: I Will Help You Get Used To It

“Tonight? Where to?” Yang Chen puzzlingly asked.

“Several of the school’s young teachers in the English department have prepared a welcome party for me, they say it will be at Bar Street’s ‘Heavenly Province’ and I..... I’ve never been to a place like that, but feel too embarrassed to reject everyone, so I’d like you to accompany me there.....” Towards the end of her sentence, Li Jingjing spoke with lesser and lesser strength.....

Fact was, after learning that Yang Chen had married, Li Jingjing was a lost soul. It was only on that day where Yang Chen helped her deal with the problem of the Chen family’s father and son without hesitation, did she come to realize her big brother Yang didn’t discard her.

Although she felt terrible about Yang Chen’s marriage, Li Jingjing was unable to resist the urge to see Yang Chen.

When Yang Chen said he would come to visit her today, she couldn’t sleep well for the whole night. Li Jingjing didn’t know how to face Yang Chen, but once she saw him, she realized that nothing had changed. She would still happily smile in front of Yang Chen, and would still turn shy and blush over little things.

But when she requested Yang Chen to accompany her to a nightclub, Li Jingjing felt afraid. She was afraid that Yang Chen would reject her because of his change in relationship status, and was even more afraid that from the very beginning Yang Chen didn’t have the intention to agree to a little request like this.

Too many thoughts went through her head in this moment, yet when Li Jingjing was getting a little dejected, she heard Yang Chen straightforwardly agree, “No problem!”

“Really?” Li Jingjing was overjoyed by the unexpected good news, and hugged onto Yang Chen’s elbow, “Big brother Yang, you’ll really accompany me there?”

Yang Chen tapped on the girl’s nose in a pampering manner, and it was a

simple action like this that made it all the more pitiful, “Look at how happy you look now, you’re supposed to be a role model, pay attention to how you look.”

“But somebody is just really happy.....” Li Jingjing stuck out her tongue, and still didn’t let go of his arm.

Yang Chen took a look at the clock on the wall, it was 2PM in the afternoon, after pondering for a moment, he asked, “Jingjing, are you busy this afternoon?”

“I’m not, I only have morning classes today. The term just started, so it isn’t a busy period.” Li Jingjing honestly replied.

With a profound look, Yang Chen laughed, “Then you should follow me somewhere now, since they chose Heavenly Province, it wouldn’t be good if you went looking this casual.”

o

After dealing with some trivial matters, Yang Chen brought Li Jingjing out of the school, and into his car.

Li Jingjing was astonished when she saw the interior of the BMW, “Big brother Yang, when did you buy a sports car?” Although she didn’t know the brand names of cars, the girl had the insight to notice that this car’s price tag definitely wasn’t low.

“Oh, now that I’ve changed my job and needed a car, I bought it.” Yang Chen didn’t continue explaining, he couldn’t possibly say that he casually took this out from his wife’s garage.

Li Jingjing didn’t continue brooding over the matter, and asked, “Where are you bringing me to, big brother Yang? It’s still so early, the teachers said that the party will start at 6PM this evening.”

“Shopping for clothes, you are still I, Yang Chen’s younger sister, if you get looked down upon when you go to Heavenly Province, that would be terrible.” Yang Chen smiled and spoke.

“Is it embarrassing that I dress like this.....” Li Jingjing was a little depressed as she lowered her head.

Yang Chen helplessly sighed, “Jingjing, that isn’t what I meant. It’s just that

you've never been to Heavenly Province, and you're not aware of it. From what I know of Bar Street, that place isn't as casual as other KTV and bars, to simply put, it's a high-class nightclub. For your colleagues to choose a place like that, it can be seen that they are all quite rich. It's no big deal if you dress casually most of the time, but if you attend the welcome party that they prepared for you so casually, it'll not just be bad for you, it'll also embarrass them. Of course, for those who are particularly concerned about self-interest, changing into a respectable, and luxurious attire will make them shut up and not affect your mood.

"I feel that the teachers in school treat me pretty well..... They probably won't ridicule me....." Li Jingjing bit her lip, and spoke with hesitantly.

"Jingjing....." While driving the car, Yang Chen spoke, "You have graduated from university for quite a while now, and ought to face the reality of society. For some matters, even though you don't care, it doesn't mean everybody else won't. Since you entered this society, you can only do your best to adapt. There is nothing to grieve or feel sad about, and nothing you can reject or loathe."

"I..... I understand." Li Jingjing nodded, "Big brother Yang, thank you. It's not that I don't understand, it's just that I'm still not used to it."

"I will help you get used to it." Yang Chen gently smiled.

In less than half an hour, the car stopped at Zhong Hai Mall, in the mall, clothing products from all over the world could be purchased, and would save Yang Chen the effort of going all around Zhong Hai to find clothes for Li Jingjing.

This was Yang Chen's first time entering a large shopping mall after returning to the country. In the morning, he went to the bank to deposit the "extorted" cheque, and after he cashed it in he had a card made. Now that he finally had a little capital in his wallet, he had a little more confidence as he brought Li Jingjing into the elevator to go up. If it was like before and he wanted to buy clothes, he would have to first borrow some money from others.

Li Jingjing had never been to a rich and majestic place like this which had perfumes pervading in the air like this to shop. She nervously held on to Yang Chen's arm, with her originally lily-like fresh, pure and beautiful face, combined with her current cute and helpless look, many other customers that walked

around couldn't help but steal glances at her.

As they walked, they passed by Louis Vuitton, Hermes, Chanel and a few other branded stores. Yang Chen frowned, and bitterly said to Li Jingjing, "Seems like these shops are more expensive than I expected, how about we take a look at Balenciaga?" Although he had some money, it was still not enough to buy those clothes that cost thousands.

Li Jingjing simply had no knowledge of the meaning behind these brand names, all she knew was the design of their clothes were extremely beautiful, while some were extremely embarrassing. At this moment she lovably nodded, "I'll listen to big brother Yang, it's better not to buy something too expensive, I..... I'm afraid I don't have enough money." As she said that, she even rubbed her little satchel.

Yang Chen knowingly smiled, and couldn't help pinching the girl's elastic face, "I will pay for the clothes today."

"But....."

"No buts!" Yang Chen immediately said, "Just think of it as something you owe me, and you can return it to me once you earn more money in the future."

Li Jingjing could only yield and agree to it. She felt secretly happy in her heart.

As Yang Chen expected, the clothes sold by Balenciaga's specialty store was a little cheaper, this was a French brand with decades of experience, they've always been about the clean, simple, refined and pure style. This brand met the requirements to be the outlet to shop for Li Jingjing's clothes.

[TL: The raws say Balenciaga is a French brand but I'm pretty sure it's Spanish.... Well it chinese it's called "Ba li shi jia" which literally means 'Paris Aristocratic Family', kinda funny.]

When the sales lady saw the two enter, she passionately welcomed them, "Mister and miss, is there anything particular you want to look at? This season's new designs just arrived yesterday, how about I introduce them to the two of you?"

"Oh, you do not need to go through that trouble, we can choose ourselves." Yang Chen politely refused the sales lady's good intentions, and pulled Li

Jingjing’s hand as he entered the ladies department. On one hand he sized up Li Jingjing’s build, on the other he personally chose clothes for her.

Since it was a work day and also daytime, there weren’t many customers in the store. Several of the sales ladies noticed that there was a young man helping his girlfriend choose her clothes, and all looked over in curiosity.

Li Jingjing was sized up and down by Yang Chen. While feeling a little weird in her heart, she also felt quite touched. Seeing Yang Chen pick out clothes for her so seriously, all the emotional pain she had vanished into thin air.

At this time, as if he suddenly came to a conclusion, Yang Chen nodded, he turned around and said to Li Jingjing, “Jingjing, take off your clothes.”

§

Chapter 59: My Princess

“Eh?” Li Jingjing was stunned, and her face was immediately flushed, “Big..... Big brother Yang, what did you say?”

Yang Chen realized that his phrasing was imprecise, and smiled, “What I meant was, for you to go to the changing room, and I will have them send the chosen clothes to you. Try on every set, then choose the one you think looks the best on you and show it to me.”

Li Jingjing breathed a sigh of relief. Seeing the surrounding sales smiling at her, she truly wanted to dig a hole in the ground and hide her face.

After Li Jingjing was brought into the changing room, Yang Chen walked a few rounds around the ladies’ department at lightning speeds, and took out several sets of clothes that he remembered. Furthermore, he matched the clothes and let a sales lady send it into the changing room.

Several sales ladies saw Yang Chen dazzlingly match up 5 sets of clothes, and were extremely shocked.

Since they were able to work in a shop like this with a big brand name, they naturally had an eye for fashion and beauty. Yang Chen’s choices for matching obviously weren’t randomly chosen. Although they didn’t see how Li Jingjing looked after putting those one, they all understood that the chosen clothes definitely suited her.

“This Miss is really blessed to have such a caring boyfriend like you, Mister.” A sales lady sincerely spoke.

Yang Chen didn’t explain anything, and just smiled as he shook his head.

The other lady curiously asked, “Mister, are you a designer? Or a figure specialized in the fashion industry? You seem extremely familiar with our brand, Balenciaga.”

“I have some friends that are relatively knowledgeable in this field, all I have is the tip of the iceberg.” Yang Chen replied.

This was the truth, when all was said and done, Balenciaga could only be considered a mid-high level brand, the tailoring of the clothes weren't even a complex fashion design. Due to his many years of experience with those old chaps, analyzing an ordinary foreign brand like this wasn't difficult at all.

When women pursue beauty, they become extremely careful and patient, therefore men are bound to wait for quite some time before seeing the finished product that went through utmost care.

In about half an hour, Yang Chen and the other sales ladies had chatted until they nearly brought up childhood stories of wetting the bed before Li Jingjing shyly walked out from the changing room.

When everybody looked over, they subconsciously held their breath, and were speechless.

The girl's ponytail was already let down with her soft straight hair cascading onto her chest which slightly covered those enchanting cheeks that were drunkish red from shyness, while her fresh and delicate face suddenly seemed extremely captivating and attractive.

The white strapless dress leveled perfectly with her arm, with natural creases on the chest, and lacy patterns extending from her elegant waist down to the ends of her tutu skirt. The skirt covered by gauze appeared to be light gold under the lights, causing the exquisitely smooth and white legs to seem extremely warm with luster.

A pair of fashionable white sandals wrapped around the pair of fair feet, and her adorable toes were exposed to the air.

Li Jingjing's figure could be classified as a young innocent beauty from a small family. It wasn't exaggerated anywhere, not overly small or skinny, the shoulders and cheeks were perfect shaped, and the breasts and butt was outstanding yet subtle.

It is said that fresh water brings out the naturally sculptured hibiscus. The girl's unique fresh and pure elegant aura finally revealed itself without any restrains.

"Oh my god, how can an effect like this be brought out from our store's clothes....." A salesperson found it hard to believe, and subconsciously sighed as

she praised.

Li Jingjing noticed everybody staring at her in a daze, while feeling shy and happy, the girl's natural love for beauty made her unable to resist spinning a circle. With a hopeful expression she asked Yang Chen, "Big brother Yang, how do I look?"

"You are gorgeous, my Princess,"

[TL: Was in english.]

Yang Chen smiled, and stooped down to make a knight's greeting.

Li Jingjing was an English teacher, and obviously knew the meaning behind those words, the joy in her heart made her completely forget to wonder why Yang Chen knew English. She could only feel that her heart was about to leap out of her chest, and her body turning into a little bird that could fly.

"I accept your praise, my knight....."

[TL: Was in english.]

Li Jingjing raised the ends of her skirt, and happily returned the greeting.

A salesperson came forward, and enviously smiled saying, "Miss, can you let us take a photo of you, as the most beautiful memory of our shop?"

Li Jingjing hesitated for a moment; actually, she only wanted to hear Yang Chen's praise, as for taking a photo for others to see, she was very shy about it, so she looked towards Yang Chen with an enquiring expression.

"Of course it's alright, our Teacher Li is a beauty, there's nothing to be afraid of." Yang Chen encouraged.

"Then..... Then alright." Li Jingjing calmly smiled and agreed.

After the few salespersons took a few photos in great delight, Yang Chen had them bring out all of the clothes he chose before, and said, "I'll buy all of these, help me calculate the total price."

At this moment, Li Jingjing had already taken off the dress, and changed into a pure white blouse with dark brown jean shorts that was easier to move around in. Her pair of long, smooth, and beautiful white legs that were exposed to the

air appeared more vivacious, and gave off a feeling of boldness and sexiness. Hearing Yang Chen say that he would buy everything, she couldn't help but cry out in alarm, "Big brother Yang, there's no need to buy all of them!?"

Yang Chen smiled and said, "It's not like you're only going to dress up like this once, you can't possibly be wearing the same thing every time you go for a gathering with those people, right?"

Li Jingjing still felt that it was a waste to spend so much, but didn't know what to say.

"Don't worry Miss, you supplied our shop with such a beautiful feature photo, we will sell these at half price." The sales lady kindly smiled and said, "Originally it's over 6400 dollars, but this time we will gift you, our guests 3 sets, and only collect 3000 dollars."

To Yang Chen 3000 dollars was indeed inexpensive, and he immediately swiped his card to make the payment.

Yet Li Jingjing instead felt regretful, 3000 dollars was about her salary for half a month, she suspected that the cost of all her clothes combined since childhood didn't even reach 3000 dollars, yet today 3000 dollars were spent buying clothes for her.

"Alright, my princess, it's getting late, right now many people are getting off work, and the traffic will be heavy. When we reach Heavenly Province it should be around 6PM, let's go."

After Li Jingjing firmly made the decision to pay Yang Chen back in the future, she pushed those thoughts behind, and happily held Yang Chen's hand as they left the store.

But just as the two were about to enter the elevator, Li Jingjing's phone rang, and she picked up the phone. With a burdened expression she spoke, "I'm sorry Group Leader Jiang, I had some matters to attend to with my brother this afternoon, my brother is now going over with me. Thank you for your good intentions."

Waiting till she hung up the phone, Li Jingjing apologetically smiled and said, "That was my English Group Leader calling, today's gathering is organised by

him. He said he went to school to pick me up but I wasn't there, and I told him you are going there with me, and he approved."

"That group leader of yours was a man, right?" Yang Chen's ears were sensitive, and could obviously tell that the man's voice on the phone was somewhat unhappy.

"Yep....." Li Jingjing lowered her head.

"Is he wooing you?" Yang Chen playfully asked.

Li Jingjing hurriedly shook her head, and spoke in a panicked manner, "There's nothing between him and me, big brother Yang, I even distributed the flowers he gave me to the other female teachers, one for each person!"

Yang Chen didn't know whether to laugh or to cry, the girl's cute thoughts made him extremely tempted to pinch her cheeks, "I think you're the one who shouldn't let your imaginations run wild. Let's go, don't let them wait for too long."

Chapter 60: I'm Not Alone In This Dao

As Yang Chen expected, the sky was already dim and it was nearly 6PM when they arrived at Heavenly Province even though he constantly overtook other cars on the road.

Li Jingjing didn't feel anything inappropriate about that. Throughout the whole journey, she sat at the front wearing a smile, and secretly glanced at Yang Chen from time to time, it was unknown what she had on her mind.

Heavenly Province's main entrance seemed incredibly imposing, and the dazzling splendor of the neon lights made all of the surrounding bars and nightclubs look inferior in comparison, the several huge flamboyant words that were lit up stole gazes even from far.

Li Jingjing clung onto Yang Chen's arm immediately after she got off the car, and followed him through the main entrance with a perturbed expression. She, who had always been a well-behaved girl would get scared even if she saw a place like this in a movie. Once she thought about how she was going to party with the other teachers in this place, and she was the main attraction, she began to feel a little dread in her heart.

"Don't worry, it's actually not a big deal, just think of it as having a meal together in a small restaurant." Yang Chen consoled.

Li Jingjing nodded, as she breathed she could smell the scent of the man beside her, and subconsciously, her heart became much calmer.

After entering the main entrance, a female receptionist wearing a fiery-red qipao walked towards them and enquired, "Honored guests, do you have an appointment?"

Li Jingjing who had lost focus only now recalled the location of the party, "It's..... It's a room named 'Scarlet Kaffir Lily'."

The female receptionist smiled and gestured welcomingly, "Please follow me."

Along the way, they walked through a corridor that was dimly lit, with glass-

esque walls that refracted a dazzling luster. The employees here wasn't lacking in handsome men or beautiful women, which showed that the treatment of employees wasn't bad.

When they walked to the door with the three words, Scarlet Kaffir Lily, written in white with a brush, the female receptionist smiled and gestured them to enter.

Yang Chen fished out a 100 dollar note from his pocket, and the female receptionist with an unsurprised face said, "Thank you" before accepting the note and leaving.

Li Jingjing looked at Yang Chen with astonishment, "Big brother Yang, is it necessary to pay 100 dollars just for leading the way?"

"A place like this usually follows a western style hiring method, these service personnel have no pay, and only receive tips. In fact, it's only a little more than 10 dollars in USD, and it isn't considered a lot." Yang Chen explained.

"I nearly forgot, big brother Yang you're a student that returned from studying overseas." Li Jingjing couldn't care less about the pain of money anymore, and happily spoke.

Yang Chen wasn't willing to stay on that topic, and dexterously opened the room's door, the moment it opened, a deafening shout transmitted out from inside the room.....

"Wanna remain but can't remain and that's what feels loneliest!!!——"

They saw a rather short and fat man with glasses standing in front of the TV doing his utmost to shout into the microphone in his hand, with his head pointed towards the ceiling and his eyes shut, singing to his heart's content.

There were already quite a number of people sitting on the sofa in the room, if added up, there were at least 8 people. After seeing Yang Chen and Li Jingjing by the door, they first stared blankly, then most of them revealed unusual smiles.

"Our main protagonist of the day has finally arrived!" A skinny female teacher with wavy hair from using heat rollers took the initiative to call out.

Immediately, everybody else present stood up and applauded. The fat teacher

that was screaming like he was killing a pig a moment ago also called out, “Teacher Li didn’t forget to bring her boyfriend for her first party, looks like your relationship is pretty deep!”

Li Jingjing promptly let go of Yang Chen’s hand timidly. In the dark room, her face was so red that it seemed like it was about to burst, “It’s not like what everybody is thinking, big brother Yang isn’t my boyfriend.”

“Then what is he?” Another male teacher laughed and asked, “He can’t possibly be your blood related brother, right?”

Seeing Jingjing look so anxious, and unable to speak a word, Yang Chen could only take the lead and explain, “Jingjing’s father and I are bosom friends despite the age gap, and I have taken care of her like a big brother. Today, I coincidentally heard that everybody wanted to hold a welcome party, and that she was too shy to come to a KTV alone, and so I’m merely here to accompany her.”

A female teacher that dressed up nicely chuckled and said, “So that is what happened, come and sit by my side handsome; Teacher Li probably wouldn’t mind, right?” As she said that she winked at Li Jingjing.

The moment Li Jingjing heard that, she subconsciously shook her head, “No can do, big brother Yang must stay by my side!”

Once those words were spoken, everyone let out kind laughs, Yang Chen also helplessly looked at the flustered Li Jingjing who blushed with shame, *this girl is really skilled at making things worse.*

Li Jingjing was no exception, she didn’t think much of it, and timidly lowered her head to say “Thank you.”

Just as the atmosphere within the room became harmonious, the door was opened once again. A man in his early twenties wearing a J.Press shirt walked in. His hair was neatly combed, along with a sharply contoured face; a rough glance revealed that he had the temperament of a brave scholar.

Upon seeing this person enter, all the teachers began greeting him as “Department Head Jiang.”

The man greeted the teachers with a warm smile before looking towards Yang

Chen and Li Jingjing. Upon seeing Li Jingjing covered in fashionable clothes and her long slender legs revealed by the hot pants like white jade, excitement flashed in his eyes, and he praised, “Jingjing, you’re really pretty today. If you dressed like this in school everyday, I reckon all the teachers and students will have their eyes on you.”

The other teachers all agreed, and complimented how beautiful and attractive Li Jingjing’s attire was.

Such praise was a little exaggerated, but all women enjoyed others praising their beauty.

When he looked at Yang Chen, the man’s eyes narrowed for a moment before he warmly stretched his hand out, “You must be the one mentioned by Jingjing earlier, Mr Yang. I’m Jiang Shuo, Yi Zhong’s English Department’s Head. May I know, how should I address you, and where does an elite like you work?”

Yang Chen internally murmured “another smiling man with evil intentions” and unconcernedly went forward to shake hands, “I’m Yang Chen, you can call me whatever you like, I’m just a small employee in a company that buys breakfast and does odd jobs.”

Once he heard this, a light shone in Jiang Shuo’s eyes, and he straightened his back. With some stubbornness and arrogance he said, “Mr Yang need not be modest, we are still young, as long as you work hard, in the future there will definitely be a day you can succeed. Perhaps you can become someone like I, named Jiang who had a higher starting point. Oh right, Mr Yang might not know of this, but my father, Mr Jiang Meng, is the headmaster of Yi Zhong and the Vice Chief of Zhong Hai’s Department of Education. It is by taking advantage of my father’s connections that I managed to become Yi Zhong’s English department head and Vice Head of the Teaching Department. I feel ashamed to say that other than publishing a few theses in the country’s textbooks and bringing a team overseas for some interviews on a few occasions, I haven’t done anything noteworthy. Perhaps in the future, Mr Yang’s achievements would even be greater than mine.”

“Department Head Jiang is being overly modest. Amongst us, who is unaware that Department Head Jiang is our school, Yi Zhong’s hope for the future, and

the most impressive rising star in the academic world?” A middle-aged female teacher swiftly stated.

“That’s right.” The skinny female teacher also chimed in, “Who knows, perhaps in a few more years Department Head Jiang would become our school’s headmaster. In terms of capability, who can compare with Department Head Jiang?”

All the teachers had actually sung a whole bunch of praises all at once, while Jiang Shuo was instead “modestly” smiling, waving his hands saying, “I don’t deserve your praise.”

Yang Chen had truly witnessed an eye-opener, and rubbed his nose to cover his smile.

I’ve seen shameless people, but I’ve never met someone even more shameless than me! Seems like I’m not alone in this dao, at the very least, there’s this chap in front of me whose skin is thicker than the city wall!

§

Chapter 61: I Do Not Intend To Sing An English Song

Li Jingjing had an innocent character. After hearing everybody praise how amazing Jiang Shuo was, she went with the flow and casually spoke some good words. Once these words were spoken, Jiang Shuo felt as if he was on cloud nine. In his mind he thought that Li Jingjing really wanted to be more intimate with him to receive some benefits, and he couldn't help but feel immensely proud of himself.

How can an errand boy from a small company possibly be compared with the son of an influential official like me?

Jiang Shuo felt that he was overthinking things earlier, he simply didn't need to oppress Yang Chen that strongly.

The more Jiang Shuo felt that way the more he thought of being more mature and earnest, that he should convey how respectable and wise he was. So he immediately called out to everybody, "Please take a seat everyone, all expenses today will be paid by me, Jiang, you don't need to be courteous."

When he looked at Li Jingjing, Jiang Shuo tenderly smiled and said, "Jingjing, you might not be familiar with this place, how about you sit by my side and I'll tell you all about it. I guarantee you will have lots of fun tonight."

"Ah?" Li Jingjing hurriedly waved her hands, and with a smile she said, "You don't need to do that, Head Jiang, everybody can continue to have fun, I don't know how to sing and dance, I can just watch by big brother Yang's side."

Jiang Shuo's hopes were dashed, and he felt anger welling up inside him. But he only thought of it as Li Jingjing being a shy chick, therefore he feigned a magnanimous smile, "Alright then, you may sit by Mr Yang's side, if there's anything you want feel free to ask, you don't need to be polite."

"Don't need to be polite? Of course I won't be polite, if I'm polite doesn't that mean that I'm being disrespectful to Department Head Jiang?" Yang Chen laughed and said, "How about we first order a few bottles of red wine to liven things up a bit, which will also give everybody the energy to sing."

A burst of disdain flowed into Jiang Shuo's heart, he inwardly scolded this country bumpkin who only knew how to take advantage and freeload. But naturally, a few bottles of red wine was nothing in his eyes, and he casually waved his hand with a smile and said, "Of course that's alright, Mr Yang, you may directly order a few bottles of whichever red wine you want."

The other teachers that were seated were all elated. Although they were considered relatively well off, it was natural that when it comes to free wine, the more the merrier.

Yang Chen revealed an expression of reverence, and immediately walked out the door to look for a waiter. After speaking to the waiter, he immediately returned to his seat and sat beside Li Jingjing, with a smile he said, "Sure enough, Department Head Jiang is a great figure with deep pockets, I've ordered 5 bottles of red wine but I'm not sure if that will be enough."

5 bottles? Jiang Shuo sneered in his heart. *It wouldn't be considered a big sum even if he ordered 10 bottles.*

"Mr Yang is too polite, with this many people 5 bottles definitely wouldn't be enough, we should order a few more bottles later."

The efficiency of the waiters in Heavenly Province was very high, after everybody chatted for a short while, the bottles of red wine placed in an ice bucket were served. When everybody looked at the 5 bottles of red wine in the bucket, they were immediately shocked!

The 5 bottles were actually '98 Castel red wine from France! Anybody with a slight amount of understanding in wine would recognize this wine, a brand from Bordeaux, France. Moreover, it was one of the well-known top class wineries, in addition it has been aged for over 10 years, it's simply impossible for its value to not be thousands of dollars!

Naturally, Jiang Shuo was the most familiar with the prices attached to these bottles of wine, he'd never thought that the red wine Yang Chen ordered was something like this, and thought he had ordered ordinary red wine that cost a little over 100 dollars per bottle.

Helplessly watching 6000 dollars fly out from his pocket, Jiang Shuo had the urge to puke blood.

“This is truly all thanks to Department Head Jiang, I don’t even dare to imagine drinking wine like this usually.” Several quick-witted teachers had caught on with Yang Chen’s scheme, while sneering inwardly, and conformed by speaking words of praise.

Jiang Shuo’s smile was a little rigid as he waved his hand and said, “It’s nothing as long as everybody is happy.”

As of this moment, his originally high spirited mood was now irritable like he had been stuck in a storm. After carefully sizing up Yang Chen who was happily chatting with several other teachers, Jiang Shuo was thinking of a way to punish this fella who didn’t know his place.

Yet the teachers in the room couldn’t care less, they were starting to feel high, and took turns going up to sing and dance to their heart’s content without the slightest similarity to a teacher with rationality. If their students saw how they looked at this moment, they might rub their eyes because of this absurd scene.

Li Jingjing quietly sat on the sofa, listened, and occasionally ate a piece of fruit. Her quiet and contented expression contained a faint smile, yet she didn’t participate in any singing.

Jiang Shuo put his feelings back in order, seeing Li Jingjing engrossed in listening to the others’ singing, he immediately had an idea, and took over a microphone and said, “Today’s party is done to welcome our Teacher Li, as your Department Head, I’ll sing a song just for Jingjing, to convey the sincere feelings I have right now.....”

The teachers all knew that Jiang Shuo desired Li Jingjing, hence they cooperated by applauding and cheering.

Li Jingjing was at her wits end, and fidgetily glanced at Yang Chen by her side, seeing that Yang Chen didn’t have any particular reaction, she relaxed a little.

At this moment, Jiang Shuo was already engulfed in deep emotions; he entered a song into the system and said, “I shall sing 《Absolute Infatuation》, as a gift to Miss Li.”

To be honest, Department Head Jiang’s singing was still pretty good, although he didn’t manage to hit some of the high notes, he managed to sing the entire

song, Absolute Infatuation by Li Sheng Jie. It was full of strong emotions, it can be assumed he'd sung it for at least 700 or 800 times. If an ordinary girl heard this, she would inevitably be touched by this.

All the teachers began applauding and cheering, and Li Jingjing conformed by clapping and saying "thank you".

Jiang Shuo was rather pleased with himself, but suddenly noticed that Yang Chen didn't clap, and was instead unceasingly pouring wine for himself to drink. Jiang Shuo's heart was once again enraged, and with a strange smile he said, "From the beginning until now, Mr Yang hasn't sung, is it possible for you to sing a song and let everybody have their fill in pleasure to the ears?"

"Erm....." Yang Chen's eyebrows creased, he put down the wine glass, and awkwardly smiled as he said, "I think that's unnecessary, I'm not so good at singing."

"How can that be allowed? Everybody has sung, whether it's good or bad is secondary, what's most important is participation." Jiang Shuo felt that he finally found a chance to humiliate Yang Chen, and immediately struck while the iron was hot by saying, "Once Mr Yang has sung, we shall invite Jingjing to sing as well, what does everybody think?"

The teachers' food and drinks were all Jiang Shuo's money, so naturally they all agreed to this measly request from him. They all joined in to shout for Yang Chen and Li Jingjing to sing.

Although Li Jingjing didn't dare to sing, she did want to hear Yang Chen's singing voice. After all, when a woman is infatuated with a man, she wants to know everything about him.

"How about you just sing a song big brother Yang? It doesn't matter if you sing badly, let's make everybody happy." Li Jingjing couldn't bear the curiosity, and egged him on.

Yang Chen no longer had a choice, he scratched his head, and received the microphone. He slowly stood up, and said, "Actually, I only returned half a year ago. So I've basically never heard much of the popular songs here. If I have to sing, please allow me to choose a song from another country....."

“Mr Yang is even a returnee?”

“Are you serious! He sure kept it well in the dark!”

“Yo, it’s not good to boast!”

Several teachers immediately heckled, it was obvious that they weren’t convinced that this man was someone who was hiding the fact that he returned from another country. Otherwise, how could he possibly be a small company’s employee!?

Jiang Shuo strongly felt that Yang Chen was trying to shirk away, and proudly smiled and said, “It’s no big deal, Mr Yang may choose a foreign song, all of us present are English teachers, so we can still understand.”

“That’s right, that’s right!” All the teachers gained interest.

After Yang Chen cleared his throat and chose a song on the computer, the song started playing in the background, and he humbly smiled to everybody, saying, “My apologies, I don’t intend to sing an English song, next up is a song for everybody, it’s a Spanish song sung by the Latin singer Enrique Iglesias, Quizás, if translated into Chinese, it should be called, ‘Perhaps’”

The rich Spanish charm of the song brought an easing feeling to all of the room. Yang Chen’s voice possessed hoarseness that perfectly fit with the song, and he started his own rendition of it.....

“.....Estasperdiendoeltiempo, pensando, pensando PorloqueTumasquieras hastacuando, hastacuando Yasipasanlosdias, yyodesesperado.....”

[TL: Untouched.]

Everybody present practically opened their eyes wide in disbelief. Jiang Shuo even more so felt pain as if there was a chicken egg stuck in his throat.

The melodious music matched with the unruly and indulgent voice, the Spanish song led everyone to be immersed in a beautiful and touching scenery.

The moment the music stopped, other than Jiang Shuo, everybody applauded vigorously, Li Jingjing’s eyes were even moist, happily revealing an intoxicated smile.

Yang Chen was a little embarrassed, and rejected the teachers' stubborn requests for him to sing another song, he only said, "Singing is too tiring."

This time nobody suspected that Yang Chen was afraid to be humiliated, after all everybody present was a foreign language teacher, and knew that understanding a foreign language and being able to sing a foreign song isn't even on the same level. Usually, to check a person's standards in a foreign language, all one needs is to check that person's capability in singing a song of that foreign language, and that person's approximate standard can be deduced.

Afterwards, things remained happy and fun, but Jiang Shuo who forced himself to laugh happily unceasingly cursed the women in Yang Chen's family. It was a pity that he didn't know that even Yang Chen himself didn't know who they were.

Because they started playing rather early paired with the fact that they still had to go to school and teach classes the next day, before it was 10PM, the teachers decided to return home.

When they were on the way out, everybody's faces had a slight tinge of red from the alcohol, and their voices were raised considerably.

Yang Chen and several male teachers all chatted warmly, right as they were walking through a bend, in the corner of his eye he caught a glimpse of a door in one of the rooms having a familiar figure entering.

Why would he be here?

Li Jingjing who always kept her attention on Yang Chen noticed his frown, and caringly asked, "What's the matter big brother Yang?"

"Oh." Yang Chen gave her a smile, "It's nothing, I thought I saw someone I know, but it should be a mistake on my part."

After Jiang Shuo paid the bill that totalled over 10,000 dollars in pain, the group left Heavenly Province and walked towards the car park.

Although he felt gloomy for the entire night, Jiang Shuo didn't forget his most important objective, and so he quickly walked to Li Jingjing's side, elegantly smiled and said, "Jingjing, how about I send you home? I just bought a new car, and can take you for a spin in it."

As he said that, Jiang Shuo pointed at the brand new silver-colored Toyota Camry. Under the street lights, it indeed looked very pretty.

The teachers were all envious, “This car must be over 200,000 dollars, right now petrol is expensive, yet Department Head Jiang still changed to a new car, how unjust this is.” Although the teachers’ wages weren’t low, most of them only drove brands like Ford, Volkswagen and other small cars that cost around 100,000 dollars.

[TL: Reading this you might wonder, how the hell can Ford and Volkswagen be so much cheaper than Toyota!? I mean, I did, but I remember visiting a Volkswagen factory in China, the Passat they manufacture there have like 20-year old designs and kinda looks cheap tbh. So perhaps the prestige of a brand like Toyota is higher there in comparison.]

Li Jingjing awkwardly smiled, and softly said, “Department Head Jiang, I think I don’t need to trouble you, I already feel very thankful to have received such hospitality today. It’s better I take big brother Yang’s car home, big brother Yang is very familiar with the location of my home.....”

Jiang Shuo pretended to be curious and asked, “Oh? Mr Yang also drove here? I thought you guys took a taxi here, where’s Mr Yang’s car?”

Yang Chen burped, his tummy was full of fruit and wine. His capacity for liquor has already recovered, yet he still felt a little uncomfortable, in his mind he was still thinking of that figure he saw earlier. Hearing Jiang Shuo’s words, he casually took out the BMW key from his pocket, and pushed the unlock button.

Everybody turned their head to look, and saw a white sports car emitting luster parked in an inconspicuous spot, there was a blue and white propeller-shaped logo, causing everyone to suck in a cold breath.

“Oh my god, isn’t that an M3!?” A light shone in the eyes of a teacher with some knowledge of cars as he said, “This price of this car in the country is more than 300,000 dollars! In the past I saw some rich merchants’ sons driving this, I never thought Mr Yang drives a car like this too, it’s even the newest model!”

Although the other teachers were unfamiliar with what the model name meant, they’ve heard of BMW, and understood what grade of a car that car was.

Jiang Shuo was also shocked, and his face turned green and purplish, no matter how silly he could be, he wouldn't believe that someone who drives a BMW M3 is an ordinary company's small employee. Although he was still puzzled as to what identity Yang Chen had, at this moment he still displayed a friendly and flattering smile, "Mr Yang sure kept it well in the dark, this is truly an eye-opener for me."

Damn it! This rich guy has nothing better to do than to pretend to be a pig to eat the tiger, what is he pretending to be a small employee for!?

"Department Head Jiang is the one with deep pockets." Yang Chen smiled and said, "Today I've drunk enough, thank you for your hospitality, goodbye." He pulled Li Jingjing's hand as they walked to the car.

The teachers all watched the white BMW start up and drive off with envy. They felt like they were dreaming, and Yang Chen's identity had also become the biggest mystery in these people's hearts.

After Jiang Shuo returned to his car, he started the engine, and looked at the dazzling lights in the car. The fondness he originally felt for it was completely gone, he fiercely smacked the steering wheel, and under the darkness his scholarly face had looked a little sinister.....

The Songs:

Chapter 62: Both Weird People

Li Jingjing who sat in Yang Chen's car felt that this was the happiest day of her life, it was even more exciting than the day she graduated from university.

There was a constant sweet smile on the girl's face; this made Yang Chen, who was driving, speechless.

"Are you that happy?" Yang Chen couldn't resist asking.

Li Jingjing nodded seriously, "But I think Department Head Jiang isn't very happy."

Yang Chen glanced at Li Jingjing ponderingly, and couldn't resist smiling as he said, "So it turns out that you knew everything, yet you still pretended to be ignorant."

"Hehe." Li Jingjing pursed her lips and laughed then said, "Actually I didn't know everything, but by carefully thinking through I was able to understand some of the things big brother Yang did."

"Listen here, if Jiang Shuo bullies you in the future or makes things difficult for you, let me know. I'll help you take care of it, just like the Chen family's father and son previously." Said Yang Chen seriously.

"Yep, understood big brother Yang."

From the beginning till the end, Li Jingjing didn't ask about the matter regarding the Chen family's father and son, and her wits made Yang Chen surprised. Yang Chen also felt relieved, perhaps this girl knew a lot more than what he had originally thought, but most of the time she preferred to act as a silly girl-next-door, who was silently concerned about him.

When they arrived at Li Jingjing's home, Old Li and his wife just returned from their walk, seeing Yang Chen and Li Jingjing get off the car, they revealed a look of astonishment.

"Good young chap! You're rich!" Old Li saw the car Yang Chen drove, and couldn't help but to be pleasantly surprised as he said, "I knew you weren't

simple little Yang, but I never expected things to change so fast. You changed your job, and your single-wheeled car has been changed to one with 4 wheels!

[TL: The single-wheel car refers to Yang Chen's mutton skewer stand.]

Aunt Li instead had her eyes on the bags of clothes in Li Jingjing's hands as she got out of the car, and agitatedly asked, "Jingjing, why did you buy so many clothes? Even the bags that are holding them look so nice, these clothes must be very expensive, right!?"

"Mom....." Li Jingjing shyly called out, and said, "It's big brother Yang who bought these for me."

The couple revealed strange expressions, but were happy. The way they looked at Yang Chen also turned increasingly affectionate.

Li Jingjing knew what was on her parents' minds, but if she revealed that Yang Chen was married, then they definitely wouldn't allow her to get in touch with Yang Chen in the future. So she could only endure her blushing face, and quickly picked up her bags of clothes and sped into the house. She even forgot to say goodbye to Yang Chen.

Old Li sincerely said, "Little Yang, it has been hard on Jingjing ever since she was a child, don't disappoint her."

Yang Chen didn't know whether to laugh or to cry, and also didn't know what to say, so he could only nod in an honest manner. Explaining at a time like this would be redundant, and would only bring about more trouble.

After bidding farewell to the elderly couple who treated him like their son-in-law Yang Chen felt lost and frustrated. While driving he thought, if it wasn't for coincidentally meeting that ice queen Lin Ruoxi, marrying Li Jingjing would actually be a pretty good choice, she's thoughtful and virtuous.

But once he thought about how his wife was now lying on a hospital bed, Yang Chen got rid of such thoughts. No matter what, he still had to take this path with Lin Ruoxi first, as for the future, who could predict that?

When he drove back to Dragon Garden, the outside air had already turned cool, the cold wind ruffled the tree tops, making the spacious and empty villa seem extremely tranquil.

Yang Chen was just about to walk to the door and enter the house when he saw Wang Ma open the door from inside.

“Wang Ma, you’re going this late?” Yang Chen puzzlingly asked.

Wang Ma was delighted, with a smile she said, “Young Master you’re back, perfect timing, I was planning to bring the books Miss wanted to the hospital. Although Miss agreed to recuperate for half a month, she says she must read books. Perhaps Young Master could go with me? I think Miss would be very happy.”

Nobody can tell even if she’s happy..... Thought Yang Chen in his heart, he then said, “Wang Ma, it’s already this late, how about you rest early? I can send the books myself.”

Wang Ma took it that the couple wanted some private time together, and didn’t say any superfluous words. She immediately passed the large plastic bag of books to Yang Chen, and returned to the house.

Yang Chen who had just returned home once again set off, heading towards Zhong Hai First Hospital for the second time today.

Half an hour later, when he reached Lin Ruoxi’s ward, the lights inside were still switched on, however Lin Ruoxi wasn’t alone in that room, there was also a woman sitting inside that Yang Chen wasn’t really happy to meet, even though she was a real beauty.

“Yo, some busy person even knows to come to the hospital to visit.” Mo Qianni seemed to be discussing something with Lin Ruoxi, and when she saw Yang Chen open the door, she unhappily ridiculed him.

Yang Chen ignored this superior that kept trying to pick a quarrel him, smiled and placed the bag of books onto the bedside table, “Wang Ma is getting on in years, it’s too taxing for her to leave home in the middle of the night, so I sent it on her behalf. Just call me out for something like that, it’s really toiling for an elder like Wang Ma.”

Lin Ruoxi indifferently looked at the books, and said, “Next time I’ll call you.”

With regards to Lin Ruoxi listening to his words, Yang Chen felt considerably satisfied. *Looks like this woman is pretty rational, and isn’t just someone with an*

indifferent and cold character.

Mo Qianni wrinkled her nose, and discontentedly said, “Yang Chen, you stink of alcohol and smoke, stand further away, don’t hurt Ruoxi’s nose!”

“Oh.” Yang Chen apologetically smiled and took a few steps back, “I had a drink with some friends I just made, and forgot I haven’t taken a shower.”

“Hmph! Ruoxi is so tired and sick that she’s on the bed, yet as her husband you still live a life debauchery, and don’t know shame.....” Mo Qianni sneered with disdain.

Even a clay buddha can get angry from such accusations, Yang Chen was a little impatient, “My wife hasn’t spoken a word, what are you blindly accusing me for? The emperor isn’t anxious but the eunuch is.”

[TL: The idiom means that the person involved is calm and collected, yet someone uninvolved is anxious.]

“What did you say!?” Mo Qianni’s eyes opened up wide as she stood up, her well developed chest repeatedly heaved because of the anger, and her beautiful face flushed, “You dare to call me an eunuch, you’re the eunuch!”

“Whether I’m a eunuch or not, wouldn’t you know if you come and try me?” Yang Chen evilly smiled and said.

“You’re shameless!”

“Stop.....” Lin Ruoxi finally spoke a word, with her brows knitted together, she looked at Yang Chen and Mo Qianni, and rubbed her forehead like she was having a headache, “Can the two of you not quarrel in a hospital? It’s already late, can you guys be quieter?”

Mo Qianni pouted as she held onto Lin Ruoxi’s hand, “Ruoxi look at this husband of yours, who does he think he is? He doesn’t take good care of you when you’re sick, and instead has the mood to go out to drink and philander.”

Lin Ruoxi remained silent for a moment, before raising her head to ask Yang Chen, “Where did you go to drink?”

Yang Chen who was feeling a little stuffy lazily replied, “Heavenly Province, there were many ladies. Why, my great wife, do you want to restrict me?”

“Oh, got it.” Lin Ruoxi nodded, then as if nothing happened, she stretched her hand, took out a book from the plastic bag, and began reading.

Yang Chen saw that things were fine, so he sighed and shook his head, and left the ward.

All that was left was Mo Qianni who sat by the bedside, looking at the door. She turned to look at Lin Ruoxi who was reading her book with concentration, and became dumbstruck and slack jawed. She wasn’t able to voice out a word for a long time, but in the end she finally managed to say one sentence, “You husband and wife are both weird people!”

§

Chapter 63: Sure knows how to pick a place

Despite tossing and turning the entire night, Yang Chen's lack of sleep didn't cause any problems for him, and he set out to buy breakfast from the peddlers as scheduled. After making his rounds, he brought the bags of varying sizes into the office.

The beauties had long been raising their heads in anticipation, once they saw Yang Chen arrive, they rushed over to grab what they wanted to eat. Several brazen sisters even intimately left moist marks on Yang Chen's face.

Zhao Hongyan smiled as she made fun of him, "Did you insist on buying breakfast from the outset because you expected to receive this kind of treatment?"

Yang Chen wasn't shy either, while gnawing on the youtiao he smiled and said, "If you also give me a kiss, I'll tell you."

"All you know is how to take advantage of innocent married ladies!" Zhao Hongyan rolled her eyes and no longer paid him any attention.

Suddenly remembering something, Yang Chen picked up a meat bun and walked to his male brethren, Chen Bo's booth. He was surprised to discover that Chen Bo was napping on the table early in the morning.

"Hey, Chen Bo, it's breakfast time." Yang Chen nudged.

Chen Bo murmured in a soft voice, then rubbed his reddish eyes and stood up with a ladylike posture. Seeing the meat bun handed over by Yang Chen, he revealed a "lovely" smile, "Thank you so much for bringing me breakfast everyday."

Yang Chen looked at him profoundly, and said, "Don't exhaust yourself too much, if there's anything you need help with, you can ask us for help, perhaps we can help you."

Chen Bo's complexion immediately turned unsightly, his pale face now panicked a little, and he rapidly blinked, "No..... Nothing, I just didn't sleep well

last night.”

“Don’t overexert yourself.” Yang Chen didn’t enquire further, he patted Chen Bo’s shoulder, then returned to his seat and began to play games.

Only a short amount of time passed before a gorgeous-looking lady entered the office. She walked to Liu Mingyu’s booth, and chatted with her about something.

Liu Mingyu who wore a moon-white skirt suit seemed to have a troubled expression, but in the end she helplessly tidied her documents, and followed the lady out.

When the two left, the round-faced Zhang Cai who was still eating a cupcake anxiously ran over, and with a worried expression she said to Zhao Hongyan, “Sis Hongyan, it can’t be that something is about to happen to sis Mingyu, right? That Department Head Ma has been bothering her for so long now, why hasn’t he given up yet?”

“That woman was sent by Department Head Ma?” Yang Chen puzzlingly asked.

Zhao Hongyan knitted her eyebrows and nodded, “She’s one of the directors under Department Head Ma; the whole company is aware that she is Department Head Ma’s lover, it’s just that nobody bluntly points it out. I wonder what Department Head Ma was asking sis Mingyu to go over for. In the past it was always Department Head Ma that came here by himself, I wonder why he sent that woman over this time.”

As if he thought of something, Yang Chen took out his phone and sent Liu Mingyu a message.

In a short while, Liu Mingyu replied back.

With merely a glance, Yang Chen placed the phone back into his pocket, picked up two of the meat buns on table, and walked towards the office’s exit.

“Yang Chen, where are you going? If Department Head Mo doesn’t see you here later, you’re going to have to endure torment again.” Zhao Hongyan said in a panic.

“My stomach isn’t feeling well, I’ll eat while squatting in the toilet.” Yang Chen

turned and said.

The bunch of beautiful PR ladies immediately had a bunch of black lines on their foreheads as they pouted.

[ED: Black lines on the forehead refer to the wrinkles made by frowning]

It obviously wasn't possible that Yang Chen was going to go to the toilet, to squat and eat his meat buns. However, even if he did go there, he would still possess the appetite to eat.

Once he walked out of the Public Relations' lounge, he immediately entered the elevator, and went straight to the car park.

Previously he sent a message to Liu Mingyu asking where she was going, Liu Mingyu evidently understood what Yang Chen meant, and replied with "Flowing Cloud Hotel."

Although she couldn't confirm whether or not leaving the office for work this time was a trap laid by Department Head Ma, Liu Mingyu was still a mature woman who was good at consciously protecting herself, so she wisely chose to let Yang Chen know. At the very least, she must let somebody know of her whereabouts.

As for what Yang Chen would do with this information, was not something Liu Mingyu could think of.

Yang Chen chose not to follow their trail to Flowing Cloud Hotel, and instead drove at breakneck speeds on the shortest route. When he arrived at the hotel's lobby, he picked up a newspaper and quietly sat on a sofa in the corner of the lobby.

Flowing Cloud Hotel possesses a 4-star rating, and also had quite a good reputation among the hotels in Zhong Hai's city center. The traffic of guests entering and exiting the dazzling lobby was extremely heavy. Therefore, suddenly having one more person sitting at a corner reading a newspaper didn't arouse any suspicion.

After waiting for more than 5 minutes, Yang Chen noticed two figures that appeared by the hotel's entrance.

It was the gorgeous-looking lady from before, leading Liu Mingyu who wore a moon-white skirt suit into the hotel.

Both of them had good looks, and were tall with well-developed figures. It seemed like Liu Mingyu had her makeup done in the car, her hair was tied up, and the streaks of red on her hair paired well with her mature and beautiful face, attracting the gazes of many men in the hall.

After entering, Liu Mingyu looked around her, it was unknown whether she was doing it intentionally or subconsciously. Slightly frowning, she appeared to be a little disappointed, but her expression returned to normal in a blink of an eye.

After that lady discussed something with her, Liu Mingyu hesitated for a moment, but in the end she still followed the lady into the elevator, and went up.

Yang Chen quickly walked to the elevator's doors, and looked at the increasing number above the doors. Starting from the 1st floor, it stopped for a moment at the 5th floor, then moved up to the 13th floor, stopped again for a moment, then went all the way up to the top floor before slowly descending.

Looking at the hotel's directory on the side, the 5th floor was a spa center, the 10th to 15th floor were rooms for guests, and the top floor was for offices.

Obviously, in a situation like this, going to the guest rooms had the highest probability. After entering the elevator, Yang Chen took out his phone and tried to make a call to Liu Mingyu, to confirm her location.

"The number you're calling is currently unavailable....."

The emergence of the electronic voice gave Yang Chen a bad premonition, for a PR employee like Liu Mingyu, she should have her phone switched on for 24 hours a day so that business opportunities wouldn't be missed. In normal situations, it isn't possible for her to simply turn off her phone. Furthermore, she even sent him a message earlier.

When the elevator reached the 13th floor, Yang Chen walked out of the elevator. The corridor was long, and had approximately 30-40 rooms. As it was morning and office hours, the corridor was absolutely silent, there wasn't even a

single hotel employee on this floor for guests.

Without anybody to ask, it was obviously impossible for Yang Chen to check every room. In addition, what gave him a headache was the electronic locks on these rooms, which meant that it was impossible to open these locks by lock picking.

Unless Yang Chen wanted to be the lead story in the news, he could use his martial arts and smash open every door! Then he would be extremely famous.

“This Ma fella sure knows how to pick a place.....” Yang Chen muttered to himself, as he considered whether he should use some forceful methods.

Although he had only known his new colleague Liu Mingyu for about half a month, their relationship was pretty good. The relationship between people doesn't require the test of time to truly be sincere and reliable, especially those between men and women. If they could trust each other, then it's worth doing something for the opposite party.

Taking a step back, if such a beautiful and mature lady was tarnished by that old Ma fellow, Yang Chen would definitely feel worse than if he ate a housefly.

Just as he was having a headache, he heard the sound of a door opening and closing from the easternmost corner, and the gorgeously dressed woman who had led Liu Mingyu up walked out with a wide smile.....

Chapter 64: Your attitude isn't friendly enough

Yang Chen was thankful for this woman's involvement, she truly provided help when he needed it most. Just as he was worrying about how to search, she provided the greatest hint.

After the lady took her leave from the door, she started walking back to the elevator with her head lowered. Yang Chen faked a relaxed face as he moved forward to meet the lady.

"Miss, What kind of benefits did you receive?"

The gorgeous lady's steps came to a halt, and she carefully raised her head to look at the young man who suddenly appeared. She vigilantly asked, "What did you say?"

Because Yang Chen had only joined Yu Lei International recently, this woman didn't recognize Yang Chen.

"I don't mean anything else Miss, even if you didn't receive credit from this you should at least have received benefits for your hard work. That little bit of commission you earned is not something I would snatch from you. However, I hope you will cooperate a little and help me knock on that room's door." Yang Chen made a very pure smile.

The lady's eyes squinted, and with a low voice she said, "You followed me? Aren't you afraid that I'll call the police!?"

"I'm truly unafraid of you calling the police." Yang Chen said.

"You're crazy!" The lady no longer paid attention to Yang Chen, and nervously tried to leave.

Yang Chen obviously wouldn't let her go, he casually grabbed onto one of the lady's arms and pulled her strongly into his embrace. Since he had the opportunity, his hands grabbed onto her breasts and pinched the two lumps of soft pink flesh.

"You!"

The lady was both frightened and angered, she could only feel her mountain ranges being completely covered, making her feel humiliated! This man had too much strength, she simply couldn't throw him off! It was as if he was made of steel!

"Let go! Otherwise I'll shout, I'll sue you for molestation!" The lady resentfully threatened as a last resort.

Yang Chen didn't think much of it and smiled, his two hands that held onto the lumps of meat exerted a little more force, to the point the lady moaned softly.

"The texture is unnatural, you had it enlarged right?" Yang Chen evilly smiled and said, "You can scream and sue me, but before you do that, I will take off all of your clothes and throw you into the elevator. There won't be anybody passing by this place anyway, so don't underestimate the speed at which I can take your clothes off at. Then we could ride the elevator down to the first floor, where I'll kick you into the lobby. The lobby on the 1st floor is such a bright and grand place with many people, you can properly exhibit your figure there."

"If you aren't happy, you can call the police afterwards, I wouldn't even mind. All I did was take off your clothes, and I won't even need to sit in jail. If you want to file a lawsuit, that's fine by me as well, it's no big deal. Of course, since I'm going to do all that, I might as well use my phone to take a photo or video while I'm at it..... Create a title and upload it to the internet, calling it..... 'Office Lady's Naked Excursion in the Hotel', this name is pretty good, right?"

The lady's face immediately paled, if things went the way this man said it would, then even if she received compensation, she would completely lose her social standing, and she could forget about appearing in society ever again! Enraged, she said, "Don't try to threaten me! I don't even know what you're talking about! If you don't let me go, I will scream. I don't believe you actually have the guts to do anything to me!!"

Tearing sound!!

When she heard the sound of cloth tearing, the lady was dumbstruck to see that half of her skirt had already been torn off, revealing the white pantyhose and her shining white skin beneath!

Yang Chen with a rather dark and hoarse voice once again sounded out, with

some impatience he said, “You had better not test my patience, or I will tear off what’s on your chest next.”

“You..... Just what do you want.....” The lady was so afraid that she wanted to use her hands to cover the edges of her skirt, but her two hands wouldn’t budge under Yang Chen’s grip. While tearing up, she pleaded, “Please don’t, I..... I’m just following orders.....”

Yang Chen coldly smiled and said, “None of this would’ve happened if you cooperated earlier, you only need to do as I say, and I won’t make things difficult for you.”

◦

In the room, Liu Mingyu laid against the soft bed, she could barely prop herself up on the mattress with her hands, and she had difficulties opening her eyes. She saw that Department Head Ma had already taken off all his clothes and only had his boxers remaining, and clenched her teeth as she attempted to stay awake.

Although she had remained vigilant, she never expected Department Head Ma to collude with the client she originally had to meet today, and swindled her into this place.

What was impossible to guard against was that during the car ride, that woman, the villain’s accomplice handed over a bottle of mineral water that was drugged with sleeping pills!

[Fallen: That’s why my mommy always told me not to take things from strangers.] [TL: FallenSOul had a rough childhood guys...]

Liu Mingyu felt that the way she thought was too simple. She had thought it was enough to just put up her guard against Department Head Ma, yet never thought that the opposite party had already prepared such a meticulous trap, and waited for her to walk into it!

Once she thought of how this short and fat old man with that large belly and ash-colored chest hair wanted to do those painful things to her, she felt that she would rather receive death. No matter how strong Liu Mingyu usually was she couldn’t prevent her eyes from tearing up.

In her mind, she suddenly thought about Yang Chen asking for her destination. She originally paid little attention to that, and casually replied to the message. But as matters stood, despite how preposterous and unrealistic she sounded, Liu Mingyu wished like never before that the young man whom she had only known recently would suddenly appear like a hero in the movies!

Department Head Ma's pair of little eyes were filled with lust and greed, and also some craziness. Looking at the mature beauty who wore an office lady skirt suit and with a perfect body outline, he pursed his lips and revealed a nefarious smile like his evil schemes had succeeded.

"Liu Mingyu, oh Liu Mingyu, you thought that by pretending to be a maiden, I can't deal with you!? There is no woman who I, Old Ma, can't toy with in this lifetime! You can just enjoy it today, I even brought a video camera here today. Once I take off all your clothes and take some beautiful photos of you in various positions, I'll place it into my collection....." Department Head Ma walked forward, and looked at the drowsy Liu Mingyu, he evilly smiled and said, "When you wake up, I'll show it to you for you to admire, and let you consider whether or not to serve me....."

In Liu Mingyu's eyes, there was dejection, pain, and unreconciliation, but in the end she still couldn't resist the sleepiness caused by the drug. She laid on the bed, murmured a little, and fell completely unconscious.

Department Head Ma looked at her with lust, and was about to pounce on her and release her beautiful body from the clothes that bound her, when the doorbell was rung.

With a burst of discontent, Department Head Ma frowned, retracted his hands, walked to the door and looked into the peephole, he saw the familiar face of the gorgeous woman, and loosened up.

The room's door half-opened, and Department Head Ma evilly smiled and said, "What's up? Little naughty fox, it can't be that you're jealous and want me to feed you a load before you're willing to leave, right?"

The lady's smile was very rigid, and she didn't speak a word, like she ate a bittergourd. But slowly, a man walked over from the side.

"It's you!?" Department Head Ma's expression turned cold, he immediately

recognized that this was the man who embarrassed him in the company's corridor, the man who wrecked his plans!

Why would he suddenly appear here!? Thinking of this crucial point, Department Head Ma quickly reacted, he withdrew his head and attempted to close the door quickly!

volaretranslations.com

Bam!

Yang Chen's hand fiercely pressed against the door, causing the fat body of Department Head Ma to fall back into the room on his butt, and on the carpet!

"Your attitude isn't friendly enough, Department Head Ma."

volaretranslations.com

Yang Chen profoundly smiled, pulled the gorgeous lady into the room, and closed the door while he was at it.

Chapter 65: Shooting a great art film

With his butt in pain, Department Head Ma sat on the ground in a panic. Everything seemed perfect just a moment ago, without a single hole in the plan. All that was left was to strip Liu Mingyu, take a bunch of photos, take a video, and this woman; one of the company's most popular beauties would belong to him.

But! Why would this jinx suddenly appear here!?

"What are you trying to do!? Who gave you permission to enter!?"

Department Head Ma carefully retreated, and spoke very fiercely.

Yang Chen pushed the gorgeous lady onto one of the beds in the room, and glanced at Liu Mingyu who was unconscious on the other bed.

I made it in time.

Department Head Ma saw that Yang Chen remained silent, he slowly picked up the clothes he had taken off, and moved towards the door.

Yang Chen looked at the setup in the room with interest, this Department Head Ma appeared to be an experienced person, not only did he bring various interesting sex toys, he even prepared a video camera on a tripod, and placed a digital camera on the bed. He was a true professional.

Seeing Department Head Ma stealthily walking to the door, Yang Chen smiled as he used a hand to obstruct Department Head Ma from moving forward, "Geez, Department Head Ma, the great play hasn't started, as the male protagonist you can't be leaving."

"Wha..... What great play?" Department Head Ma stuttered as he asked.

Yang Chen pouted, and pointed to the video camera and said, "What you wanted to film earlier, it's not too late to start filming now."

Department Head Ma blankly stared, and immediately spoke in a pleasantly surprised manner, "Could it be that you, brat, want to toy with this woman with the surname Liu as well? Sure! As long as you keep this under wraps, we can

even do her together!” While he spoke, his eyes once again sparkled. He had also thought it through, since the plan was already exposed, then pulling Yang Chen in to be an accomplice was also a good choice.

“Thank you for your good intentions Department Head Ma, however I do not wish to participate in the shooting of a great art film like this.” Yang Chen made a strange smile and said, “Moreover, the female protagonist isn’t Liu Mingyu, it’s her.....”

As he said that, Yang Chen pointed at the gorgeous lady who was as quiet as a cicada in the winter, “I believe Department Head Ma should be extremely familiar with this lady, if the two of you film it together, it will surely be like heavenly lightning striking a volcano, and it will be an amazing spectacle.”

[TL: I TLed it as Heavenly lightning striking a volcano. It apparently has a profound meaning in modern love stories, where the heavenly lightning refers to a male’s craving for sex, while the volcano refers to a female’s craving for sex. Joined together, it frequently refers to the natural primitive instinct humans have that is irresistible, meaning passionate sex is about to happen.]

Department Head Ma’s expression totally changed, and with a start he said, “You’re threatening me!?”

“No no no, I just want to keep a memento of Department Head Ma’s strong and healthy body. As for whether it’s a threat or not, that would depend on whether or not Department Head Ma provokes me in the future, or provoke the other female colleagues by my side.” Said Yang Chen with a harmless smile.

“Impossible! You had better get out right now! I know some people in the underworld, be careful for I will call people to have you.....”

Pa!!

Without waiting for Department Head Ma to finish speaking, Yang Chen slapped his face.

After being abruptly hit, Department Head Ma could only feel a scorching pain, covering his left cheek, he opened his eyes wide and inconceivably pointed his finger at Yang Chen. With a trembling voice he said, “You..... You dare hit me!?”

Pa!!!

A louder slap landed on Department Head Ma's right cheek, and a red handprint emerged.

"I don't have the time to speak drivel with you, begin now. If you don't follow my instructions to do some things with this woman, I will keep hitting you until you are willing."

"You basta....."

Pa! Pa!!

Department Head Ma was trying to speak, and again received two slaps, making him see stars. His fury reached its boiling point as he loudly howled and swung a fist, trying to hit Yang Chen's face as well!

But what kind of strength could an old man who spent many years immersing in debauchery have? The moment he raised his hand, his left cheek was once again hit by Yang Chen's lightning-fast slap!

Pa!!

This time much more force was exerted, Department Head Ma fell onto the ground from that slap, and half of his face was badly swollen.

Department Head Ma was in so much pain that he shed tears, with dread he cowered into a corner, "Don't..... Don't come near me! I really have a backer in the underworld!"

"I don't know if you have a backer or not, but if you don't obediently take off your clothes, I will have to help the two of you take it off." Yang Chen said with a smile that wasn't like a smile.

The gorgeous lady on the bed had already been terrified, seeing the usually arrogant and bossy Department Head Ma beat up to the point that his parents probably wouldn't be able to recognize him, she tremblingly hugged her knees, looking at Yang Chen with terror.

Cold sweat covered Department Head Ma's forehead, he wanted to resist, but was no match for Yang Chen. Unable to escape, he felt despair in his heart.

"Looks like Department Head Ma isn't willing to cooperate." Yang Chen slowly walked forward and stretched out his hands, like he was about to do something.

Department Head Ma suddenly shouted, “Stop!” With great difficulty he swallowed his saliva and said, “I..... I’ll listen to you, but you must guarantee that you won’t threaten me if I don’t provoke Liu Mingyu and the others.....”

Yang Chen sighed, and suddenly trampled on Department Head Ma’s thigh!

“OWW!” Department Head Ma wailed, he felt like his thigh was stabbed by a stake!

“You aren’t qualified to discuss conditions with me, and aren’t qualified to doubt my words. All I’m asking you is, will you do it or not.....” Yang Chen expressionlessly said.

“I’ll do it! I’ll do it!!” In this lifetime, Department Head Ma had never received such mistreatment before, a “beat until willing” scene like this only appeared on TV shows. He never expected it to actually happen to himself, he finally understood why those people in movies would give up after being unable to endure, it truly feels terrible!

Without waiting for Yang Chen’s instructions, Department Head Ma crawled on the floor to the gorgeous lady’s bed, and angrily shouted, “Slut! Quickly take off your clothes!”

“Bu..... But.....” There were tears in the lady’s eyes as she displayed an expression of humiliation and unreconciliation, “Department Head Ma I don’t want to.....”

Pa!!

This time it was Department Head Ma’s turn to give the woman a slap to the face, with a twisted fat face he said, “Take it off if I ask you to, what are you pretending to be an upright maiden in front of me for!”

The woman’s tears poured out, yet she still began taking off her clothes in submission while sobbing.

A fair chest, long perfectly shaped long legs, and an outstanding rear began to progressively expose itself on the pure-white bedsheet. If these were placed in a nightclub, they would definitely be top grade goods.

When the woman stripped down till there was only her bra and skirt left, Yang

Chen had already pointed the video camera at the man and woman, and excitedly watched the live erotic performance.

Department Head Ma had always been filming others, this time it was his turn to get filmed. Although he wasn't used to it, once he thought of getting beat up by Yang Chen, he could only endure the embarrassment, he hugged the lady's body and began kissing all over it.

The lady was shedding tears at first, but after some of her private parts were kissed, she gradually became horny, and accepted the fact that since she was already this old man's thing, there was nothing to be embarrassed of. With this experience, her relationship with Department Head Ma would definitely become even closer, since they were in the same boat, perhaps she might even receive more benefits. When she thought that way, the unresigned feelings in her heart also gradually dissipated.

The two who were being filmed, even had a young man spectating by the side; under such mistreatment, all kinds of evil thoughts sprang into their minds. The more they hugged, kissed, and tangled, the more they felt a strange pleasure, way beyond the clandestine sexual adventures they shared in the past!

Chapter 66 So what if I saw all of it

Department Head Ma felt scorching hot all over. He no longer gave a damn about being filmed. His big mouth started biting all over the lady's young body; his hands also began exerting more strength as he pinched the lady's soft breasts. He then forcefully tore off the black lacy underwear she had on.

The lady also passionately began to reciprocate, she unceasingly kissed and tongued with Department Head Ma. Her pair of long jade-like arms caressed onto Department Head Ma's fat and robust lower back.

Yang Chen saw how engrossed the two were, and felt a little hot inside, however he naturally wouldn't be so mad as to join in the fray. Although that lady could be considered a beauty, when compared to the other ladies by his side, she was considerably inferior. *Moreover, I'm not a casual person.*

"Department Head Ma, don't waste the props you brought, these things aren't cheap, why not use it?" Said Yang Chen as he venomously smiled.

Department Head Ma's head popped out from a tight spot between the lady's breasts, his face was totally red, and his eyes were blazing, he couldn't care less about Yang Chen's malicious smile, and very quickly picked up a few toys he brought here from the cabinet, and began using them on the lady.

"Wu Wu....." Although the lady had also received such treatment in the past, this time was extremely intense, and she couldn't stop tearing. But she didn't stop Department Head Ma, and instead conformed to his frenzied movements. Her whimpering began to turn strangely charming and gentle.

The "flames of war" that followed became more and more intense, when Department Head Ma was deeply engrossed into the play, he began to give his all on an expedition wreaking havoc onto the woman's body. Half an hour had already passed, and their foreplay was complete. The single-sized bed was full of their frenzied vestiges, their fishy smells pervaded through the air.

Yang Chen was greatly excited as he watched, and kept giving suggestions on the side, "Department Head Ma! Don't just do one position, change positions, so

that the result of the filming will be even better!”

At that moment, the hotel room truly became a filming studio.

Other than directing, Yang Chen also took some splendid photos from time to time, the shutter was snapped repeatedly, the angle of the video camera also changed from time to time. He was much more “dedicated” now than when he worked in the office.

It was a pity that there was a disparity between Department Head Ma’s standards of actual battle and his acting skills. After a mere 5 to 6 minutes, Department Head Ma laid on the lady’s shining white back, gasping for breath and unable to move, like a pug.

However, the lady never received her satisfaction, she swung her outstanding butt, intending to end this play.

Department Head Ma vaguely cursed, it was unknown what he called the lady. He brought out several odd-looking tools, and with a series of movements, it was the lady who climaxed.

Only after the two stopped to rest did they realized what they had done, they saw the satisfied Yang Chen taking out the video and digital camera’s SD cards, and couldn’t help but reveal faces full of despair.

“You…… Will you honor your promise to not spread this out?” Department Head Ma prudently asked. Due to his lingering fear of being hit, he used his hand to cover his cheek, and spoke very softly.

“As long as you’re well-behaved, I definitely won’t waste my time playing with you.” Said Yang Chen.

Department Head Ma sighed a breath of relief, but in order to feel more secure, he said, “When I have the chance I will mention you to the HR department and the other high-ranking employees, so you can get promoted quicker.”

Yang Chen smiled and said, “I don’t care about such things, but you better leave this place with this woman quickly, I don’t really want to see your face. As for these equipment of yours, take them all away as well.”

Department Head Ma immediately shuddered. He picked up his clothes that were strewn on the floor and put them on, while also rushing the lady who was resting to quickly put on her clothes.

When the two finished putting on their clothes and picked up their bags, they were ready to flee, before Yang Chen reminded them, "Leave the money for the room, I will check-out the hotel room later."

Department Head Ma stumbled; he hastily took out several large notes and placed it on the bed. He then smiled sadly and rushed out of the door with the lady, as if he wasn't willing to stay for a moment longer.

After the two left, Yang Chen did a simple cleaning of the room, and sat on the bedside where Liu Mingyu slept, he gently smiled and said, "Sis Mingyu, you don't need to pretend that you're sleeping anymore, your face is so red, those who don't know what happened would think that you're having a high fever."

Liu Mingyu slowly opened her eyes. Because she was feeling shy, her eyelashes trembled a bit, and her beautiful and tender face looked especially pitiful.

After slowly getting up, she limply leaned against the headboard, looked at Yang Chen with an embarrassed expression, and with her head slanted she softly asked, "You knew I was awake from the start?"

"It was indeed inappropriate to wake up in the situation earlier, which was why I had them rush out, otherwise it might stifle you too much." Yang Chen honestly replied.

Liu Mingyu bit her lip, and suddenly smiled sweetly, "You're really a bad person, they were nearly toyed to death by you shouting like you were slaughtering pigs."

"If I don't toy with them, they will find a way to toy with you. I believe you're not selfless to the point of sacrificing yourself, right?"

"What do you mean sacrificing myself..... You only know how to speak nonsense!" Liu Mingyu playfully pouted as she rolled her eyes at Yang Chen, "But I still have to thank you, I had already resigned myself to fate, I never expected that you would suddenly appear."

To Liu Mingyu, the changes before her eyes were indeed too abrupt, it was like

Yang Chen's appearance directly pulled her out from the depths of the abyss and into heaven. If it wasn't for her experiences in the business world, she would've forgotten to express her gratitude and cried out loudly. But without a doubt, she felt extremely thankful to Yang Chen.

Yang Chen shrugged his shoulders, "It was no big deal. However, sis Mingyu, I'm very curious, what's your impression of the filming earlier?"

Seeing Yang Chen reveal a strange expression, Liu Mingyu could only feel her heart thumping, it was an odd feeling to her. She hung her head down, and stroked her messy hair, "I only saw a little bit, and don't know anything."

"But I seem to remember, that not long after they started kissing, you opened your eyes... Could it be that sis Mingyu has selective memory?"

Liu Mingyu finally couldn't endure talking about this dirty topic anymore, she got up and smacked Yang Chen's back several times. Her cheeks were both red as she said, "That's right! I saw it all! So what if I saw all of it, wasn't it all your fault, you rogue!"

"Sis Mingyu, you must make things clear, the fault lies in Department Head Ma, I purposefully came to rescue you because I felt concerned about you." Yang Chen righteously spoke.

"You obviously knew that I was awake yet you still asked them to do those..... those vulgar things, you definitely won't sleep well!" Liu Mingyu complained, but with her beautiful eyes she followed up asking, "You're already married, yet you're still not upright, it can't be that you and your wife like to play like them, right?"

Yang Chen was speechless, thinking about what if he did those things to Lin Ruoxi, and suddenly shivered. *Wouldn't she cut my little brother off?* Hence he awkwardly laughed a little, "Let's put an end to this topic for now, sis Mingyu you should first tidy yourself up, then return to the office."

Liu Mingyu took a step back, and no longer continued on that topic, she frowned and nodded, "This place stinks too much, let's hurry up and leave."

When they got out of Flowing Cloud Hotel, it was already lunch time, Liu Mingyu "came back from death's door" and felt a little frightened, but felt even

more joyful, looking at the watch, she hesitated for a moment and said to Yang Chen, “Yang Chen, I want to thank you properly, how about I treat you to lunch?”

“That’s fine of course, but my appetite is rather big, so did you bring enough money, sis Mingyu?”

When Liu Mingyu saw that Yang Chen agreed, she happily and charmingly rolled her eyes at him, “Who cares if you have your fill or eat well.”

§

Chapter 67: The reason for not recognizing

Liu Mingyu was a little surprised while she sat in Yang Chen's car. "I didn't know you drove a BMW to buy breakfast for us sisters in the office, it must be a really tough job for a rich young master like you."

"I'm not some rich young master, this car is actually my wife's." Yang Chen didn't feel embarrassed saying, "Sis Mingyu, you can just think of me as a pretty boy who is being taken care of by a wealthy woman."

"Your face isn't white." Liu Mingyu chuckled and said, "Moreover, you're more useful than a pretty boy."

[TL: Joke lost in translation, the words 小白脸 literally translates to small white face, is a derogative term of calling someone an attractive young man/pretty boy/gigolo that is useless/worthless.]

As the two joked about, Yang Chen started the car. Only after they got onto the road did Yang Chen ask, "Sis Mingyu, how do you intend to deal with the recorded footage and photos?"

Liu Mingyu remained silent for a moment before saying, "You can keep it, or throw it away."

"You don't want it?"

"So what if I keep it. I believe that after this experience, Department Head Ma wouldn't attempt something like this again. I'm just an ordinary employee, and don't want to cause so much trouble, as long as nobody tries to intentionally hurt me again, I'm fine." Those words carried some helplessness, but this was her honest answer.

Yang Chen also expected this outcome, and nodded without appearing to be surprised. He didn't stay on that topic, and instead asked, "Then I would like to ask, beautiful madam, as thanks, where would you like to treat me to lunch?"

Exhausted, Liu Mingyu rubbed her forehead, "Drive towards Famous Road, they have several restaurants that are pretty good there."

“You look very tired, are you feeling sleepy?” Yang Chen noticed Liu Mingyu’s little action.

“Yep..... It seems like the drug’s effect hasn’t receded completely.” Liu Mingyu also didn’t hide anything, she truly felt drowsy.

Yang Chen frowned, “Then let’s not go for lunch, it’s better that you rest first. I’ll send you home.”

“Thank you.....” Liu Mingyu felt warmth flowing into her heart, she suddenly realized that this man beside her had a caring and considerate side, “We should still go to eat, I may be feeling a little sleepy, but I’m even hungrier.”

Yang Chen followed according to Liu Mingyu’s wish, and the two soon arrived at a rather clean Cantonese Restaurant. It looked like a chain restaurant, and wasn’t especially high-grade. However, it worked well with the city’s fast rhythm when it came to serving meals.

Not long after the two sat down, they quickly ordered the dishes. Yang Chen hadn’t had his fill in the morning before he left to settle Liu Mingyu’s predicament. He was hungry for a while now, so he began to devour the food ravenously.

“Can’t you pay attention to your image? You look like you haven’t eaten for three years.” Liu Mingyu couldn’t resist laughing as she said.

“Something like an image is left for men and women who want to impress, I’m already married; image is worth nothing to me.” Said Yang Chen as he chewed a big mouthful of food.

While the two were chatting, a man and woman suddenly entered the door behind Liu Mingyu. The woman was clothed attractively and prettily, with a petite figure. The two men behind her seemed to be checking her out.”

“What a coincidence, I never would’ve expected Miss Liu Mingyu to also make an appointment to have a meal with a man here.” The woman playfully looked at the two, and smiled as she spoke.

Liu Mingyu reacted slightly strangely, but immediately showed a flowery smile as she stood up and said, “Isn’t Miss Wang the same too? Moreover you even have two men to keep you company.”

“They are just my assistants, we’ve just finished business at a company nearby and came here for a meal. May I know how to address your male friend, Miss Liu?”

Yang Chen somewhat unwillingly put down his chopsticks, smiled and said, “My name is Yang, Yang Chen.”

“Wang Yue, pleased to meet you.” Wang Yue extended her hand with a confident smile.

Yang Chen gently shook her hand, then once again sat down and picked up his chopsticks to eat.

Wang Yue sent a disdainful look, and coldly smiled as she said, “May I know what’s the relationship between Miss Liu and Mr Yang? Could it be that Mr Yang is the new ‘capable person’ that Miss Liu found?”

Liu Mingyu didn’t retreat an inch as she charmingly smiled and said, “Yang Chen is my colleague, we came out to work. If it’s about a ‘capable person’, he definitely can’t compare to Miss Wang’s two assistants in ‘capability’. Furthermore they both have tall figures, and can definitely satisfy Miss Wang.”

The two women opposed each other with hostility, their eyes were like cold winds and sharp knives, causing Yang Chen who was eating to feel that the air temperature had fallen by a couple of degrees.

“Miss Liu is too courteous, I see that Mr Yang is such a great eater, he must be very strong. When he works for Miss Liu, he definitely has to exert himself a lot. Right, is the reason Mr Yang’s so hungry because he overexerted his body physically?” Wang Yue pretended with a bewildered expression, “Seems like Miss Liu needs Mr Yang to do a lot of things, huh?”

“No matter how big of an eater a person is, he can’t possibly compare with the strength of two people. Furthermore, with two men, you can do things that cannot be done with only one man, what do you think, Miss Wang?” Liu Mingyu wasn’t stingy in her counterattack.

You guys can bicker all your want, why pull me into it? As a lady, speaking like a rogue in the middle of the day, this world is really chaotic. Yang Chen silently criticized, he felt at a loss towards this woman who suddenly appeared.

“Miss Wang, forgive me for being blunt, but you resemble a movie actress that I really like.” Yang Chen raised his head, and spoke seriously.

There’s no woman who wouldn’t like others praising their beauty, especially a young, successful career woman like that who is slightly popular. Hearing Yang Chen’s words, Wang Yue revealed a little pride, then pretended to be indifferent as she said, “Oh? Which? Mr Yang shouldn’t overestimate me, there’s no way I can compare with someone as famous as Miss Liu.”

Yang Chen carefully glanced at Wang Yue a few times, and muttered a praise, “You really resemble her the more I look, I often watch this actress’ films, I remember her name is Matsushima Kaede, has Miss Wang heard of her?”

[TL: Porn star.]

Wang Yue, who looked slightly pleased, immediately turned angry after hearing those words. She angrily snorted, “Mr Yang really knows how to joke, who is that actress? I truly have no idea.”

“It’s normal that you don’t know.” Yang Chen sighed as she said, “I’m pretty familiar with that Miss Matsushima, but I wasn’t able to recognize your similarities to her immediately. I tried hard to think the reason, and finally came to a conclusion. The main reason why I wasn’t able to recognize your similarities at first glance, was because you’re wearing clothes!”

Wang Yue’s face immediately went pale and green from anger, she angrily stamped her feet, glared at Yang Chen, and quickly walked out of the restaurant with her two assistants.

Liu Mingyu at the side finally couldn’t endure her laughter as she said, “You’re truly rotten to the core, to actually place Wang Yue together with a Japanese AV actress. I reckon she won’t be able to fall asleep tonight.”

“That woman was asking for it, why did she disturb me while I was eating?” Yang Chen grumbled.

“She is the PR for a different company, and often runs into me, I snatched away many customers from her hands, so she always quarrels with me whenever we meet.” Liu Mingyu explained.

Yang Chen spiritedly said, “So that’s why Sis Mingyu achieves number 1 in

performance every year, being beautiful is indeed the one and only way.”

Liu Mingyu didn't deny this, she stroked her smooth long hair, smiled and said, “This is how this industry is like, but you shouldn't think of it in the wrong direction. Fact is, when we have talks with those large corporations, the most they get is eating a little tofu with their eyes. If they really try to have a touch, there isn't even a need for us resist, the opposite party's higher ups would severely punish them. Unless they don't want to work anymore, they definitely wouldn't dare to do anything to overstep their boundaries. Those large corporations treat their reputation and industry talks extremely seriously. Actually the outside world still has many prejudices towards the job of a PR, but these are things that cannot be helped. Like the matter of me snatching away Wang Yue's business, if you told others that I didn't provide any special services, nobody will believe it.”

[TL: In chinese, eating someone's tofu means taking advantage of a person, usually referring to a lady and her body.

Yang Chen nodded, and once again revealed a naughty smile as he said, “Right, so Sis Mingyu also knows of fellow student Matsushima, seems like you also have knowledge in that field.”

“You can't clap with one hand, for those kind of things, how can it be done with only a man and without a woman? If a woman knows nothing, how is she going to make her man happy? If a woman learns to act from an actress, is there anything inappropriate about that?” Liu Mingyu replied without the slightest bit of embarrassment.

Yang Chen was truly speechless, he sent Liu Mingyu a thumbs-up, and continued immersing himself in the food.

Chapter 68: Casual Person

After the meal, Liu Mingyu still felt sleepy, so Yang Chen sent her back to her apartment, then returned to Yu Lei International.

When he returned to the Public Relations' office, many pretty girls wore strange smiles as they looked at him. Yang Chen couldn't make heads or tails of what was going on, so he asked the vivacious Zhang Cai, who he was more familiar with, "Zhang Cai, what's up with everybody?"

Zhang Cai was snacking on something that looked like gummy bears. Her well-developed body wasn't only natural, it also received a lot of "nourishment" which helped a lot. It had to be perfect, the parts that should have more fats could be a little fatter, and parts that should be slimmer cannot be fat. Obviously, the married lady Zhang excelled in this field.

"Where did you go?" Zhang Cai replied with a question.

"I went out to settle some matters." Yang Chen wasn't daring enough to talk about the matter of filming the movie.

Zhang Cai put down the candy and stood up. Her bulging mountain-like breasts and her round charming face faced him, and her clear eyes stared so hard that Yang Chen felt a little diffident inside.

"Went to settle some matters eh? Who did you settle some matters with? Comrade Little Yang."

"Er....." Yang Chen could smell the COCO perfume on Zhang Cai's body. Looking at that bubbly tender face, he felt like biting her, and slowly said, "I was alone, and it was just some trivial matters."

Zhang Cai suddenly made a *puchi* laugh, pouted and rolled her eyes at Yang Chen, "Still pretending, Sis Mingyu just called to request for leave. She said you're the one who sent her home."

This Liu Mingyu is truly uncooperative. Yang Chen grumbled in his heart, and could only awkwardly smile and return to his seat.

The moment he sat down, Zhao Hongyan who sat the closest rolled her swivel chair to Yang Chen's side, and ambiguously asked, "What did you do to Sis Mingyu? You can't possibly have pushed Sis Mingyu down, right?"

These women were truly brazen, Yang Chen once again learned something new.

It had always been him teasing ladies, yet after he entered Yu Lei International it was often him being teased by ladies. Our dear friend Yang Chen was rather hurt by this, and finally understood how true "the feeling of oppression when being pointed at with a gun" was, and as he approached this crisis he realized, "Shameless people are invulnerable!"

Therefore, Yang Chen stretched one of his hands out to fondle Zhao Hongyan's thigh, and slowly closed in on what was under Zhao Hongyan's black suit skirt.....

Today, Zhao Hongyan wore a bold black fishnet stockings, between the lines, patches of snow-white thigh flesh was revealed. Similarly, she wore a pair of open toe leather-esque heels, which revealed her bright red varnished toenails, this matched well with her young married woman's image. This attire of a white-collar city woman, perfectly showed an office lady's mature appeal, the intense visual stimulation wasn't something the fake OLs(Office Lady) in a certain island country's films could duplicate.

[TL: Japan, AV.]

Suddenly noticing Yang Chen's hand on her thigh, Zhao Hongyan's body first quivered, before immediately grabbing onto Yang Chen's hand, "Yang Chen do you wanna die! What if this is seen by others!?"

"It's your fault for asking so flagrantly. If I don't act more pervertedly how can I live up to the way you portray me? Moreover, the way you're dressed is so alluring, isn't it for men to appreciate?" Yang Chen had a calm expression, as if nothing had happened, like he was saying something work related to Zhao Hongyan, "Furthermore, from the way you speak, it seems like if no one sees, I can touch however I want?"

How could Zhao Hongyan possibly have encountered such a thing in the office before? Her pretty face blushed, looking like a fruit so ripe that water could flow out. She rolled her eyes at Yang Chen, but it made her look all the more

tantalizing, “You had better not act recklessly, I’m someone who has a husband. Even if our relationship is good, we’re just colleagues. I’m not the kind of person you think I am.”

“I’m also someone who has a wife, and not a casual person.”

“I’m afraid that when you’re casual it’s to the point of being inhumane.”

Yang Chen eyebrows were raised as he replied, “Unfortunately, you hit the mark.”

With that said, Yang Chen’s hand forcibly broke through Zhao Hongyan’s weak single-handed defense. He once again advanced, and even stretched to the spot between her thighs.

“You..... Don’t be like this.....” Zhao Hongyan was a little agitated, she could only feel a scorching hot palm slide along her thigh to the point below her abdomen, but she didn’t immediately dodge, and instead hastily held her skirt down with both hands, doing her best to make sure the other people around her won’t notice anything strange.

At the warm spot between her thighs, the tender skin gave Yang Chen unprecedented pleasure. Due to nervousness, Zhao Hongyan’s thighs wedged tightly together, and also briefly shuddered.

Several of Yang Chen’s fingers had already touched the silky panties beneath Zhao Hongyan’s skirt, he caressed it a little, and even felt a few strands of hair. Yang Chen knew what it was, and revealed a nefarious smile.

Zhao Hongyan’s head drooped while blushing with shame, with a soft and tender moan she said, “Don’t..... Don’t do this, quickly take it out.”

“You ask me to take it out, but didn’t move away earlier, and didn’t pull my hand away from your thigh. Now that I’ve touched that, you even pushed down your skirt so that others can’t see.” Yang Chen calmly shifted closer to Zhao Hongyan’s ear, and blew a hot breath onto her earlobe which had a earring on it.

Zhao Hongyan’s body quivered, the blush on her face reached her ears. Fortunately, their backs faced the others in the office, which was why this anomaly wasn’t spotted.

“Women do need to be reserved, but an occasional indulgence is no big deal, right?”

It was as if Yang Chen’s voice had a bewitching power as Zhao Hongyan slightly lifted her eyes, like the waves of spring she swept a glance at Yang Chen, “Somebody let you take a little advantage of her yet you still humiliate her, be careful for I might really shout out about how you harassed and molested me.”

Yang Chen did not reply, and only slightly moved his finger under the skirt, the finger bumped into a certain sensitive spot, and quietly began to draw circles on it.

“Ning.....” Zhao Hongyan lightly moaned, and hastily covered her cherry lips, she could only feel the intense stimulation from Yang Chen’s finger, and nearly couldn’t hold back a loud moan.

In an office like this where all of their colleagues are present, a young man was using his hand to rub her most private part, and even used his finger to gently caress it. Yet not only did she not stop him, she even did something to conceal what happened..... Zhao Hongyan had never thought she had such a side to herself, but the peculiar stimulation she was receiving made her helplessly accept this situation.

Very soon, Zhao Hongyan felt that the area between her thighs was a little wet, slowly soaking her underwear. If it continues this way, Zhao Hongyan felt that she wouldn’t be unable to endure the pleasure and would end up pushing herself against his fingers!

Ding ling ling! Ding ling ling!

Suddenly, the phone on Zhao Hongyan’s desk rang, this was like an alarm, causing the slightly dizzy Zhao Hongyan to panic and turn her chair around to her own desk and pick the phone up.

Yang Chen’s hand also pulled out from that land of peach blossoms, but there was some thick liquid leftover on his fingers.

Only after Zhao Hongyan panted her way through the phone call, did she angrily turn around and glare at Yang Chen, “It’s all your fault! There’s still a whole afternoon left, yet I’m all wet inside, it feels terrible!”

“I didn’t expect you to get so wet.” Yang Chen smiled, and rubbed his fingers a few times.

Zhao Hongyan immediately lost her anger, and turned away ignoring Yang Chen. All she wanted was to find a hole and hide inside it, this day was too embarrassing, but only she knew, that at that moment, other than the shame and regrets in her heart, there was an unprecedented sweet feeling.....

Done with assailing his difficult colleague, Yang Chen felt much more contented in his heart, and prepared to turn on the computer to play the game that was of high IQ to him when his phone suddenly vibrated.

The calls he received recently were mostly bad news, but only when Yang Chen picked up the phone this time did he realize that all of the previous phone calls weren’t considered a big deal.

The phone call was from Wang Ma, with a trembling, frightened and weeping voice, “Young..... Young Master..... Miss she..... She was kidnapped!”

Chapter 69: Just who are you

Lin Ruoxi was kidnapped!? Wasn't she resting in the hospital!?

"Wang Ma, speak clearly. What happened?" After Yang Chen received this shocking news, he became calmer.

"I just received a phone call from Master, telling me to get Young Master to Zhong Hai harbor's 84th warehouse at the easternmost area. Miss and Miss Mo were both taken there..... Also..... We're not allowed to call the police, otherwise....." At the end of the words, Wang Ma was sobbing so hard that she couldn't form words.

"Wang Ma, have you confirmed this?"

"I've confirmed it....." Wang Ma said, "The doctors and nurses are all panicking as well. Miss Mo accompanied Miss to the flower garden for a walk, and didn't return. I asked the hospital's management to keep this a secret for now, but the truth will be out sooner or later, what should we do....."

For something like that to happen between a father and his daughter, Yang Chen could only say that he regrets not beating Lin Kun to the point he became retarded. This person truly has one "strength", which is strong willpower, not shedding a tear until he sees the coffin!

"Wang Ma, do not panic, I will handle this matter. Wait at home, I will contact you." Yang Chen consoled Wang Ma for a bit, then hung up the phone.

Yang Chen felt that this matter was weird. According to logic, with just Lin Kun's means, he couldn't possibly have kidnapped two women from the hospital's garden just like that, and even transport them to Zhong Hai's harbor. There was definitely someone specialized in doing these things helping him. But what Xu Zhihong did the last time had already touched upon Lin Ruoxi's bottom line, so he most likely wouldn't help Lin Kun, so who could it be?

Although he knew that Lin Kun was scheming something to take revenge against him, and shouldn't hurt the two women for the time being. He was still

afraid that on the off chance Lin Kun might have done something to the two of them. Therefore Yang Chen still decided to get there as soon as possible.

To the amazement of the ladies in the office, only a short time had passed since Yang Chen came back, yet he once again dashed out of the office. This made all of the women look at each other in dismay.

The Zhong Hai Harbor is one of Huaxia's largest harbors, and occupies a vast area. If one didn't experience it themselves, they simply couldn't comprehend the impression of vastness it gave off.

The blue sea stretched as far as the eye could see, while the sounds from the waves made the harbor seem exceptionally cold and lonely.

After entering the harbor, the car revealed its prowess on the flat ground. If one gazed from afar, one would see a white sports car dashing across the harbor's coast like a missile.

Yang Chen fully concentrated on his surroundings as he stepped on the accelerator while looking at the warehouse numbers on the side of the road. He drove east for close to 10 minutes before finding the large warehouse marked with the big red numbers "84" on it.

The whole warehouse looked worn down, the rusted metal doors were slightly open, and by its side were discarded rocky materials and lime powder, looking like a terrible mess.

The closer he got to the destination, the calmer Yang Chen's heart became, to be honest, a term like "kidnap" was always used by him against others in the past. Never would he have thought that there would be the day where someone abducts his woman. Even though that ice-cold girl doesn't think of herself the same way, it was still enough to make Yang Chen wonder whether to laugh or to cry.

Unhurriedly closing the car's door, Yang Chen quickly swept a glance around the warehouse, and couldn't help but frown. Although it was very difficult to perceive, his sharp senses allowed him to notice that in several of the blind spots in the warehouse, there were professionals stationed around looking out for intruders. They were stationed at perfect angles to monitor every movement in the warehouse. Yang Chen guessed that they also possessed medium-sized long-

range rifles.

This was a gang whose standards scaled on the international level. Yang Chen felt that these were all interesting, and even felt a little peculiar excitement.

After stepping into the warehouse through the large entrance, there was the smell of prolonged decay. The floor was empty, while several streaks of sunlight shined through the holes on the windows, causing the turbid air in the warehouse to seem like it was swirling.

At a corner of the warehouse, Yang Chen saw two delicate figures that were tied together.

He could only see Lin Ruoxi and Mo Qianni tied together on chairs, with ropes tightly tying their limbs to the chair, they sat back to back and couldn't see each other's faces.

Ahead of them were a pack of robust men wearing short-sleeved shirts. There were tall and sturdy ones and also short and skinny ones, but majority of them had dark tanned skin. It was obvious that they were exposed to intense sunlight very often. But what made Yang Chen pay more attention to them was the fact that when they saw him enter, they remained indifferent, as if they didn't take him seriously, and continued discussing something with each other. What made Yang Chen feel even more excited to see were the weapons in their hands and on their backs, which were basically all AK-47s, M16s and other assault rifles.

These guns themselves weren't anything special, but the place they were appearing in was Huaxia. If this was some other country, like the USA for example, Yang Chen wouldn't give a damn even if someone carried a M16 and walked on the streets. But it was too out of the ordinary for a pack of people like that to appear in a country where even pistols were a rare sight.

Yang Chen was very clear, the organization that called themselves "Huaxia's Protectors" wasn't an empty boast. For these people to sneak in without getting caught by them and entering Zhong Hai to execute a kidnapping showed that they were truly capable.

Just as Yang Chen thought of this, Lin Kun who was chatting with several robust men finally noticed Yang Chen, and his face immediately revealed hatred and a malicious smile.

“Mr Lin, is this the young man you wanted to capture?” Using English to ask this question was a man who wore a sleeveless shirt, military camouflage trousers and had short hair. This man seemed to be their boss, as his hand held a Desert Eagle, a pistol that only formidable soldiers can carry. It was also the only pistol amongst this group of people.

Yang Chen was already close by at this time, when he heard this man’s accent, he was startled. This was a Vietnamese accent, so it turns out that these people were from Vietnam.

“Yes, Mr Long, I hope you can capture him. I want to personally send him to hell!” Lin Kun viciously replied.

At the same time, Lin Ruoxi and Mo Qianni who sat on the two chairs noticed the arrival of Yang Chen. Lin Ruoxi gazed at Yang Chen with a complicated expression, on her pale and beautiful face was a little despair, while Mo Qianni instead looked stubborn and a little astonished, as if she couldn’t believe Yang Chen would come here alone for the two of them.

The tall man with the surname Long sized Yang Chen up, and expressionlessly said, “Mr Lin, I have to say that it’s truly not worth your money to hire us. If it’s just to handle this man, just one of my subordinates will suffice.”

The other robust men revealed prideful smiles, clearly approving of their boss’ evaluation.

Lin Kun gritted his teeth and said, “No, Mr Long, after I’m done with this brat and attain the shares that should belong to me from that slut, the money I’m giving to you isn’t anything at all!” That said, his face revealed some crazed greed as he looked at Lin Ruoxi.

Fact was, these years of extravagance had already led Lin Kun’s original 30% of shares to decrease to less than 1%. Constantly selling his shares to other shareholders gradually led him to death’s door. This time he sold all of the shares he had left, just to go all in on this.

Lin Ruoxi fearlessly stared back at Lin Kun, as if she didn’t feel any emotion. She indifferently said, “Lin Kun, you truly disappoint me.”

The woman realized that this man had already gone past the point of no

return, and directly addressed him by his name, Lin Kun instead of addressing him as father.

But she didn't expect that in this terrible situation, the man who had nothing to do with this had actually calmly came to face the consequence that he doesn't deserve.

Lin Ruoxi guiltily looked towards Yang Chen, although she had a bad impression of this man, for him to come here alone for her, she would be lying if she said she wasn't touched.

"Lin Kun, you're not a man! How can you treat your own daughter like this!"

Mo Qianni had a staunch character, and at this time she finally couldn't hold back from hurling abuses.

Lin Kun complacently laughed, then nefariously gazed at Mo Qianni, "You, wild girl, I've long been irritated by the sight of you, once this matter is settled, I will properly teach you a lesson! If it wasn't for that old hag protecting you in the past, I would have thrown you to the bed and done you several hundred times! Who do you think you are? You're merely a bitch raised by our Lin family!"

"You're shameless! Heinous! Despicable!" Mo Qianni's covered face was flushed, she struggled attempting to break free, but the professionally tied rope made all her efforts futile.

Yang Chen saw Lin Ruoxi's guilt-ridden gaze towards him, and also saw his bad tempered superior Mo Qianni bravely resisting. In his heart he couldn't help but have a more favorable opinion of the two women, one knew right from wrong and understood kindness, while the other did not submit to force, staying upright and brave.

It was a pity that in the history of mankind, women always played the role of the weak. The reason feminism was born in this world was because women couldn't receive equal treatment, and the most straightforward reason for that was because women really couldn't defeat men.

The situation in front of his eyes was the same, because no matter how radiant these two women were in the business world, no matter how many men they defeated, when they were matched against the most primitive, most vulgar

method of attacks, other than exercising their powerful tongues, there wasn't much else they could do.

Perhaps this was one of the conditions for mankind to procreate, if women were as strong as men, how could men have the chance to be the knight saving the princess?

The robust man with the surname Long didn't seem to understand Chinese, and couldn't be bothered to understand the bickering between Lin Kun and the two ladies. He looked at Yang Chen, seeing that Yang Chen didn't have the slightest bit of cowardice, he walked forward in admiration. With English he said, "Although you will soon be sent to hell, you are still a brave man, I will let you die with a whole body."

Yang Chen made a weird smile, and sized the man up with interest. He then opened his mouth to speak a line that Lin Kun and the two women couldn't understand.

"Your surname is Long, what's your name?"

The tall man was slightly startled, with his eyebrows knit, he used the same language to reply, "You can speak Vietnamese?"

"Who is Long Zanhuan to you?" Yang Chen continued smiling as he asked.

If being able to speak Vietnamese made this man marvelled, then when Yang Chen continued to use Vietnamese and ask about the name "Long Zanhuan", there was only "mindblown" left on the man's face!

"Just who are you?" The man's face turned grave.

Chapter 70: Don't worship me too much

A light flickered in the man's eyes, but in the end he still nodded, and gestured for Yang Chen to lead the way.

Not understanding a word, Lin Kun hastily inquired, "Mr Long! What is the meaning of this?! I am your employer, what just happened!? Why aren't you catching him!? I've paid you money!!!"

"Don't bother me!" The man with the surname Long raised the Desert Eagle in his hand, the dark muzzle instantaneously pointed at Lin Kun's forehead, and he frostily said, "We were only hired by you, as for how we work, you're in no position to command us!"

Lin Kun was frightened to the point he fell to the floor on his butt, trembling in cold sweat, without the guts to utter another word.

Yang Chen was too lazy to pay Lin Kun another glance as he led the man to another corner. After confirming that nobody could see what was going on, he turned around, and used Vietnamese as he asked, "Why did 'Flood Shark' come to Huaxia, are you guys unafraid of the 'Yellow Flame Iron Brigade'?"

Hearing "Flood Shark", and "Yellow Flame Iron Brigade", the man's pupils shrunk, the Desert Eagle in his hands also abruptly pointed at Yang Chen's head. He hoarsely asked, "Just who are you!? Why would you recognize us, what's your relationship with the 'Yellow Flame Iron Brigade'!?"

Yang Chen shook his head with a bitter smile, "If I'm from the Yellow Flame Iron Brigade, do you think you guys can still leave here alive?"

"Then who are you?" The man didn't dare to relax at all. This person in front of him gave him a strange oppressive feeling, the more he looked at him, the more his feelings deviated from their first meeting.

Yang Chen thought for a moment, and with a little hesitation he took out something from his breast pocket.

A small breast pocket naturally can't hold a weapon, so the man did not treat

it as a dangerous action and pull his trigger. He just quietly waited to see what Yang Chen was taking out.

“Do you recognize this?”

What Yang Chen took out from his pocket was a small ring, about the size of an ordinary wedding ring. The ring’s material looked like platinum, but due to years of wear, its luster appeared to be greatly diminished. There were no precious stones decorating it, it was just a metal ring. But what was rather peculiar was, on the ring there were patterns that had an ink-like gloss, the patterns were complex to the point that it could make one’s eyes spin.....

If the ring felt a little familiar to the man at first glance, then when he abruptly glimpsed at the band of it, those meticulously engraved Latin words, he immediately felt his blood freeze, and his lungs choke!

He had seen this ring before on a document, amongst his gang, the existence of this ring was just a legend.

However, even though they most likely wouldn’t get to see this ring for their entire lifetime, they must remember it, especially the Latin words engraved on the inside. These Latin words were passed down by the ancient Romans. It’s a language that had faded away long ago, but in this mysterious language, there was a word, it could also be called a name, which was something they wouldn’t dare forget for their entire life.

Because, the person who owns this ring possesses supreme power in a certain territory, and is also the person they worship the most from the depths of their souls!

Yang Chen saw the expression on this man’s face, and knew that he had already understood. So he casually placed the ring back into his shirt pocket. Nobody would believe that this token that could turn the world upside down was quietly lying in one of this man’s pockets everyday.

“Alright, don’t reveal such an expression. I don’t believe my ‘Flood Shark’ is formed by fools.” Yang Chen amicably patted the man’s broad shoulders.

The man’s body shuddered, and he returned to his senses, seeing Yang Chen’s warm smile, he could only feel the frigidity of winter, the coldness of the polar

ice, thinking of this man's past achievements..... He couldn't help but break out in a cold sweat, his legs weakened and he knelt on the ground, he even wanted to bury his head into the cement floor.....

"Your..... Your subordinate Long Zanyi greets you my king!" Long Zanyi sincerely yelled while stuttering.

Yang Chen raised his eyebrows, "You're called Long Zanyi, if that's the case, Long Zanhuang is your brother?"

"Precisely, revered King!" As before, Long Zanyi four limbs were still on the ground and he did not dare to raise his head while he respectfully replied.

Yang Chen helplessly sighed, "You can stand, this is Huaxia, and not a part of my kingdom, you need not follow etiquette."

Long Zanyi saw that Yang Chen didn't seem to intend to scold him, and carefully crawled up, retreated three steps, then stood upright. The way he looked at Yang Chen totally changed. His tiger-like eyes were brimming with crazed reverence and worship!

He actually got to meet him!? The man who was spoken of as a god-like existence from the mouth of his brother, actually appeared before his eyes!?

"Right." Yang Chen suddenly thought of something, and said, "I don't like being addressed as 'king', if you don't mind, please change your form of address, you may call me by my other name."

"Yes! Your Excellency Pluto!" Long Zanyi proudly shouted, as if shouting out this name was an incomparably glorious matter.

Seeing that Long Zanyi understood his identity, Yang Chen did not speak any superfluous words, and bluntly asked, "Why did Flood Shark appear here, although I didn't make an order prohibiting entering Huaxia, your brother Long Zanhuang is famous for being careful, and shouldn't casually make such a rudimentary mistake."

Long Zanyi respectfully replied, "Reporting to Your Excellency, our Flood Shark's movements only include several of Huaxia's coastal zones, and conducting transport jobs within those zones, so we did not receive too much attention from the Yellow Flame Iron Brigade. This time we received

employment from Lin Kun only because the job he offered us was executable in a small area with low risks involved. Therefore, after thinking it over, we accepted this mission.”

“He had enough money to hire you guys?” Yang Chen curiously asked.

“Reportedly, his money was obtained by selling all of his shares.” Long Zanyi replied, “Just enough to hire us for a simple mission like this.”

When he said the words “simple mission” just now, Long Zanyi suddenly felt that something was off. How was this mission simple!? The person they had to deal with was the one in front of his eyes!

He wanted to change his wording, but Long Zanyi didn’t know what to say, and remained speechless with an awkward expression.

Yang Chen didn’t seem to mind, in his mind he concluded that Lin Kun must have sold all of the Yu Lei International’s shares he held, and received enough money to employ the mercenaries. He couldn’t help but find this funny. The mercenaries Lin Kun staked everything on to employ ended up being his subordinates, this could be considered incredibly unlucky for Lin Kun.

“Long Zanyi, you can bring your brothers and leave, I will settle everything else.” Said Yang Chen.

“Your Excellency, do you require us to kill Lin Kun? I’m afraid that it will stain Your Excellency’s hands if Your Excellency personally does it.” An ominous glint glowed in Long Zanyi’s eyes, in his heart he wanted to shoot Lin Kun into a hornet’s nest! This idiotic old man, nearly turned him into the laughing stock of the mercenary world!

You want to send the Death God into hell? Isn’t this a joke? Hell is His Excellency’s land of fun!

Yang Chen shook his head, “Go tie Lin Kun up, throw him into a corner, and you may leave. I will settle what comes afterwards. The longer you guys stay here, the more you raise discontent from the Yellow Flame Iron Brigade.”

“We will obey, Your Excellency!”

Long Zanyi didn’t say more, to obey was their mission as soldiers, moreover, it

was an order from the highest level.

Lin Kun, who was hard pressed, was exceptionally angered. These stupid soldiers, after spending the money they point their guns at their employer's head. If it wasn't because he needed them for something, and couldn't beat them, he wished that he could stab them a few times!

At this time, he saw Long Zanyi expressionlessly walking over, and immediately switched to an eager smile, "Mr Long! Have you caught that damned brat yet!?"

Long Zanyi did not reply. He used Vietnamese to talk to his two closest subordinates, and his two subordinates immediately nodded gravely. In a few moments, they had used a rope to tie Lin Kun up!

Lin Kun's strength was of no challenge in these men's eyes, after tying him up like a dumpling, they tossed him directly to the ground.

"Your stupidity should've sent you to the fires of purgatory long ago." Long Zanyi walked over, fiercely growled this line in English, then threw a kick at Lin Kun, knocking him unconscious.

When everything was dealt with, Long Zanyi whistled, and in a flash, from all sides appeared mercenaries, orderly saluting.

After Long Zanyi issued an order, everybody shouted a slogan, but only they themselves knew what it meant.

Immediately following, to the confusion of Lin Ruoxi and Mo Qianni, these men who kidnapped them left the warehouse like the wind, they ran out of sight in a flash.

Right as the two ladies couldn't make heads or tails of this situation, Yang Chen with that expression as relaxed as before walked over, there was even a pleased smile on his face.

"Yang Chen, what is the meaning of this?!" Mo Qianni couldn't help but ask, they were in such dire straits earlier, how did it suddenly change so drastically!?

"I say, Miss Mo, can you wait for me to untie the ropes before we slowly talk? You aren't afraid of pain, but I'm afraid my good sweet wife Ruoxi is hurting." Yang Chen dotingly looked at Lin Ruoxi, and proficiently untied the complicated

rope bindings.

Lin Ruoxi shot a profound glance at him, and dully said, “You do this even faster than the people who were tying us up.”

Yang Chen was stunned, then he smiled awkwardly. In his mind, he thought. *This is natural, this is what I do for a living.....*

After the two women were released from the bindings, they slowly stood up, rubbing their arms, and again looked at Yang Chen oddly. After all, everything that happened was too mysterious, how did this man manage to handle this situation?

“I know you two have many doubts, but please get into the car outside first. I will first send the two of you to the hospital, then slowly inform you about it.” Said Yang Chen.

“Then he.....” Lin Ruoxi bit her lip, and looked towards the unconscious Lin Kun on the floor.

Yang Chen sternly said, “Are you sure you still want to maintain that sympathetic stance?”

Lin Ruoxi blankly stared, then bitterly shut her eyes. When she once again opened them, her eyes exuded a trace of indifference and resolution. Shaking her head, she uttered, “Let’s go.”

Chapter 71: This tactic is a little too cruel

The three quickly got into Yang Chen's car. While rushing back to the hospital, Yang Chen made a call to Wang Ma to inform her that everybody was safe and sound. Wang Ma cried tears of joy, and asked them to hurry back to the hospital so that they could check on Miss.

Mo Qianni kept pestering Yang Chen about what actually happened. Even though the cold Lin Ruoxi pretended not to care, she too, occasionally glanced at Yang Chen, obviously pretty curious about it as well.

To be honest, her evaluation of this cheap husband of hers, changed from the initial disgust, to disregard. Gradually she began to have some interest in him, particularly with regards to these few days' of miraculous performances. This was the first time Lin Ruoxi ever had the impulse to understand a person, but if it's about liking him, it was still a far cry from that. Simply based on that carefree attitude of his, not bothering to climb higher made Lin Ruoxi, who took her work seriously, despise him.

Yang Chen couldn't endure Mo Qianni's barrage of questions, and casually cooked up a lie. He said that he when he came he had already called for the Zhong Hai's Special Forces to deal with their criminal gang. If they didn't leave at once, they would be encircled and wiped out by the Special Forces. Lin Kun lied to them that there were no Special Forces in this area, so Lin Kun was the true evil-doer. In the end, they wisely chose to take Lin Kun's money and leave, and no longer gave a damn about the three of them.

A lie like that probably couldn't even convince a 3-year-old kid, but Yang Chen was dead set on this story without letting it go. In the end, while panting with rage, Mo Qianni gave up, sat back against her seat and no longer bothered Yang Chen.

Fact was, if it wasn't for Yang Chen ignoring his personal safety and following those people's request to rescue them alone, they wouldn't have let Yang Chen off so easily. They would definitely have smashed through every barrier to find

the truth.

Lin Ruoxi didn't ask about that, and abruptly asked just one question, "What language were you using to speak to that man earlier?"

"Oh, Vietnamese." Yang Chen knew that he wouldn't be able to conceal this.

Mo Qianni couldn't help but look at Yang Chen with the expression of looking at a freak, "You're proficient in English, French, Italian, Spanish, German, Japanese, and even know Vietnamese?"

"Is it really that strange? Actually, I know Thai too, the two languages are pretty similar." Yang Chen shamelessly took Mo Qianni's expression as reverence, and slightly boasted.

Lin Ruoxi was slightly touched, when it came to languages, perhaps this man was truly a genius. Yet when she thought about it for a while, she noticed that there was a problem, "Why did you learn Vietnamese?"

Yang Chen grinned and replied, "My wife, you must have heard of this before. That year, Vietnam had a slogan called 'Sacrificing a generation of maidens, prospering Vietnam's economy'. Vietnamese girls are pretty good, high quality yet cheap. The language was learnt after going to Vietnam to play a few times."

"....."

After dropping Lin Ruoxi off at the hospital, Yang Chen didn't stay for long, and left the remaining matters for Mo Qianni and Wang Ma to settle. Luckily, nobody had called the police yet, so they were saved from a lot of trouble.

After Yang Chen went outside the hospital, he made a phone call. The phone soon connected, and a familiar boorish voice came from the other side of the line.....

"Mr. Yang, the person you wanted us to catch has been brought here, awaiting you to personally deal with."

"It's at Chen Resi..... Oh no, now it's called Zhang Residences, right? Yang Chen laughed as he inquired.

On the phone, Zhang Hu also straightforwardly laughed, "It's all thanks to Mr Yang and Miss Rose for secretly helping, otherwise I, Zhang Hu wouldn't have

this day.”

Yang Chen didn't remain courteous to him, and said, “Zhang Hu, I'm coming over now. Before that, you can begin giving that fella some suffering, but remember this, you're not allowed to kill him, everything else is fair play..... I want him to never ever have the claws to scratch someone ever again.

“Yes Mr Yang, please be at ease and leave such things to me.” Zhang Hu's voice carried a trace of cruelty.

Hanging up the phone, Yang Chen slowly got into his car and drove towards the Zhang Residences, this was also to give Zhang Hu a little more time to teach Lin Kun a lesson. If it were up to Yang Chen, he would definitely prefer to get rid of Lin Kun once and for all. But since he decided to assimilate into society, killing his father-in-law was somewhat wrong. Moreover, although Lin Ruoxi was completely disappointed by this father, if she found out that he killed her father, that may become something she will never forgive him for.

The relationship between people is the most difficult to understand, just like him and Lin Ruoxi, a number of days ago, they were just strangers to each other. But now, he already couldn't help but take her feelings into consideration.

By the time Yang Chen found an empty lot to park his car, about half an hour had passed before he arrived at the Zhang Residences on foot. When the door guards saw Yang Chen, they simultaneously bowed.

Yang Chen saw fear in their eyes, it seemed like their memories of him intruding that night was still fresh in their minds.

“Mr Yang!” Zhang Hu's familiar voice was heard from the door, alongside him were five robust subordinates, and they walked towards Yang Chen. He wore a white shirt and a gold Rolex watch, which gave this boorish man the air of a boss.

“Seems like your days have been good, you look more like a boss now.” Yang Chen playfully joked.

Zhang Hu's old face blushed, “Hurrhurr, this was all thanks to Miss Rose's great leadership. I'm just a boorish person, and my subordinates are all sworn brothers, I don't understand those things.”

Yang Chen puzzlingly asked, “Has Rose been keeping close contact with you?”

Zhang Hu stared blankly, and immediately gave a relaxed laugh, “I know what Mr Yang is worried about, do not worry, Mr Yang. The people from the West Union Society that were planted by my side were all shunned by me. My connection with Miss Rose is also very covert. West Union Society’s President Situ even had a drink with me yesterday. The old ghost’s opinion was that he was actually thankful that I brought down Chen Dehai.”

“Oh? Situ Mingze didn’t suspect a thing?” Yang Chen didn’t believe the big shot of the west region’s underworld could be so stupid.

Zhang Hu excitedly said, “Miss Rose prepared a good play several days ago, her Red Thorns Society and my subordinates battled for a piece of territory, and several people died, in the end the territory was snatched by me. To be honest, that is just a place for me and Miss Rose to discuss things, and is a hideout. However, after sacrificing several of the low-level waste, Situ Mingze has already allowed me to enter West Union Society’s group of elders.”

“You cannot be careless, before the final moment, nobody knows what the result will be.” Yang Chen kept feeling that things couldn’t be this simple, and so he offered this advice.

Zhang Hu seriously nodded, but he continued looking at Yang Chen with great confidence. *So what if Situ Mingze doesn’t really trust me? With this man here, in the worst case scenario, we could always break into the old ghost’s hideout and slaughter him, wouldn’t that be about the same as the way he single-handedly got rid of Chen Dehai!?*

Yang Chen roughly understood what was on Zhang Hu’s mind, but was too lazy to say more. Although he wasn’t afraid of making a move, the trouble that will be drawn to him if he personally made a move more or less could force him out of his current tranquil lifestyle. This was also the reason Yang Chen doesn’t easily make a move himself.

“Where is that Lin Kun?” Questioned Yang Chen.

Only now did Zhang Hu know that old man’s name was Lin Kun, pointing towards a garage far away he said, “Right inside, my sister Zhang Ying heard about what Yang Chen wanted to be done, and volunteered.”

“Your sister?” Yang Chen thought of that delinquent girl who asked him the

silly question “Why aren’t you running?” that day. It seems like after her brother became the boss of this place, life has been comfortable for her.

Zhang Hu weirdly smiled as he said, “Mr Yang might not know this, but my sister has many more tricks up her sleeve than I, her brother. Since Mr Yang said that as long as he doesn’t die anything is fine, my sister immediately charged in after hearing that.”

Yang Chen believed what Zhang Hu said, because he remembered Zhang Ying being tortured by Chen Feng on the bed that day. Receiving such inhumane treatment, it was inevitable that she became psychologically twisted. Naturally, she would also want to perform some perverted things on others.

With Zhang Hu leading the way, Yang Chen walked towards the inconspicuous little garage. Before he even reached the doors, Yang Chen could already hear yelling coming from inside the garage, those shouts were from Lin Kun, and they sounded full of grief and pain.

There wasn’t much sunlight in the garage, so the space was lit up by several white incandescent lights.

Pervading the air was a charred scent, while the surroundings were filled with discarded furniture, curtain fabrics and so on.

In the instant they walked in, the scene gave Yang Chen goosebumps, well, not just Yang Chen, even Zhang Hu and the other robust men all had goose bumps!

In an empty area, Lin Kun’s branded clothes were strewn all over, even his underwear was thrown somewhere. His years of debauchery made his pale body’s flesh loose and heavy.

His hands were tied together by a rope to the ceiling, and couldn’t move an inch, while his legs were also tied together. He could only bend up and down.

If that was all, everybody’s expressions wouldn’t be this strange, but behind Lin Kun stood a skinny youngster. He was also naked, and was even hugging Lin Kun by the waist, doing a certain something that a man shouldn’t do to another man. While panting, he released hoarse cries that resembled liberation.....

Lin Kun was actually being violated by another man! No wonder he kept releasing those wails of grief and pain. It had always been him toying with

others, now it was him getting toyed with, as of this moment he probably didn't even have the energy to cry!

While he was overseas, Yang Chen had seen such scenes before, but they truly weren't as disturbing as this one. Moreover, this was in his face, and he could see every little detail clearly.

"Mr Yang, Bro, how is it? This tactic of mine is pretty good, right?" At this moment, Zhang Ying who stood at a corner of the room saw the people who entered, and walked over with an enchanting smile, like she wanted a praise.

"Ying, this tactic is too cruel isn't it!" Zhang Hu trembled.

Zhang Ying disdainfully snorted, "For someone who dares to anger Mr Yang, this is considered going easy. If it wasn't because I can't take his life, I would still play crueler!" Said Zhang Ying, as she looked at Yang Chen with bewitched eyes.

Yet Yang Chen didn't dare have more contact with this eccentric woman, he didn't agree or disagree as he smiled, and once again glanced at the sight that could lead a man astray. This time, he suddenly noticed something about the youngster violating Lin Kun.

Why does he seem a little familiar?

§

Chapter 72: Such an honorable husband

“That person is..... Chen Feng?” Yang Chen finally recognized that pitiful fellow, he didn’t expect that it would be him.

Compared to the last time he met Chen Feng, he looked hell of a lot different. His originally slim face was now even more slender, his hair was so messy as if he rolled around in the grass, his cheeks were sunken in, and there were quite a number of scratches and bruises on his body.

What made him even harder to recognize was his muddleheaded and crazed smile. Rather than calling him human, he could be called an animal in the shape of a human, that has zero intelligence.

The original Chen family’s young master has now turned into something that doesn’t look like a human or a ghost, perhaps this was heaven’s will.

However, Yang Chen did not pity him in the slightest, karma naturally has its way of doling out retribution. The Chen Feng of now is the result of him being an evildoer in the past.

Zhang Ying looked at Chen Feng with a malevolent gaze. It was Chen Feng who ruined her life, and so there was no reason for her not to hate him.

“That’s right, he is no longer called Chen Feng, now he is just a dog I’m raising!” As Zhang Ying spoke, she suddenly pulled on the rope in her hand!

Chen Feng who was just desperately banging Lin Kun was suddenly dragged down to the ground with a hoarse yelp. Then like a dog he quickly crawled to the front of Zhang Ying’s feet and began licking her toes.

At that moment, Yang Chen noticed that on Chen Feng’s neck was a leather collar used for pets, with the leash in Zhang Ying’s hand!

Chen Feng’s movements had already lost all rationality, it seemed like he had received too many mental shocks and became deranged.

“Everytime I see that bastard I feel like putting a bullet through his head, but my sister just won’t allow it.” Zhang Hu fiercely said.

“Killing him will be letting him off too easy. I want to torture him, he toyed with me in the past, so I’ve let other men toy with him. Every night there are brothers and sisters who had been bullied by him coming to toy with him. It won’t be too late to kill him after we play with him till we are sick of him.” Zhang Ying naturally said, “Mr Yang, do you still need my pet to serve that old man?”

Yang Chen glanced at Lin Kun who had fainted from the pain, and expressionlessly said, “You guys can handle it, but that line remains, as long as he doesn’t die, nothing else matters.”

With his purpose here fulfilled, Yang Chen turned to leave, he did not have the mood to continue watching. Whether it was Lin Kun or Chen Feng, what they ended up as was no longer of any importance.

But in this world, plans will never keep up with reality.

While Yang Chen was on the way to the hospital, Zhang Hu again called, he informed Yang Chen of a piece of news that stunned Yang Chen; Lin Kun became insane!

The multitudinous failed revenge attempts, being thrown into garbage bins, then being tied up by the very mercenaries he hired; he had high aspirations but all his efforts were for naught. In addition, he lost all of his shares in Yu Lei International. Lin Kun who had practically nothing was already downhearted, yet today he was stripped away of his final bit of dignity as a man by that bastardly Chen Feng.....

Originally a rich family’s son who had played to his heart’s content for half a lifetime, in the end he received such a miserable ending.

Perhaps turning insane was a type of liberation for Lin Kun.

Yang Chen just asked Zhang Hu to bring Lin Kun to Zhong Hai’s mental hospital. As for everything else, Zhang Hu should understand what to do.

Just as Yang Chen was sighing over the matter of Lin Kun, he suddenly received a call from Mo Qianni. This beautiful superior had never shown him a smile, even though he saved her this time, she still maintained that expression as if he owed her money; Yang Chen felt exceedingly helpless about this.

“Hello, what commands do you have, Miss Mo?” Yang Chen dispiritedly

greeted.

On the line, Mo Qianni was a little annoyed, “What? From your tone, it seems like talking to me is a torture to you?”

“It’s not torture, I feel overwhelmed by favor.” Yang Chen frowned, this woman really likes to pick a fight.

Mo Qianni snorted over the phone, “Let me tell you, this lady is inviting you out for dinner tonight, don’t reject her kind offer.”

Yang Chen was extremely skeptical, and vigilantly asked, “Miss Mo, can it be that you’re going to send me to some eating place to chase a debt again?”

“Go die Yang Chen! This lady is showing great kindness by thanking you for saving me, which is why I invited you out for a meal. You think I’m the type that likes to pick a quarrel, the type that is insensitive and heartless, that kind of woman!?”

That goes without saying..... Yang Chen silently criticized, but on his mouth he still agreed . After all there was no reason for him to reject her offer, he was truly a little hungry too.

“If that’s the case, come to our company’s car park, we’ll take my car there.” After she said this, Mo Qianni hung up without allowing any rejection.

Yang Chen’s stomach was rumbling, and so he drove faster, and arrived at Yu Lei International’s basement car park. Most people had already got off work, and so the car park was relatively void of cars.

Mo Qianni’s red Audi A4 was conspicuously parked in a corner, while its owner was staring at her watch waiting for him.

Mo Qianni had already changed into casual clothes, a black cotton dress, perfectly covering her slim waist and outstanding butt, beneath that pair of beautiful long jade-like legs were a pair of crystal high heels. A head of smooth long black hair was untied, complementing her attire. As before, the beautiful face was full of intelligence, and had a little makeup on it, meeting the requirements as a traditional elegant and polished eastern beauty.

If he didn’t know how “vicious and merciless” this woman was, Yang Chen

would be like the other men, captivated by Mo Qianni's elegance and charisma.

"Get in." Mo Qianni did not beat around the bush, seeing Yang Chen walk over, she immediately opened the door and sat in the driver's seat.

After Yang Chen got into the car, Mo Qianni turned on the audio system, using the AUX mode to connect to a silver iPod, and an old Sarah Chen song, 'Dream to awakening' melodiously sounded in the car.

Mo Qianni didn't take the initiative to talk to Yang Chen again, and minded her own business while driving.

After the car got on the highway, Yang Chen was rather surprised to find out that Mo Qianni's iPod was filled with classical old songs, including the Rolling Stones, the Beatles and other old school western works.

"Looks like you enjoy nostalgia." Yang Chen was rather moved, this young city woman also had a side like this.

Mo Qianni rolled her eyes at Yang Chen, "The new things are easily forgotten, things that aren't easily forgotten are the ones worth ruminating over....." Having said that, she paused for a moment, then said, "A vulgar person like you wouldn't understand such a thing."

"I understand." Yang Chen seriously replied, "Two years ago I felt that Hollywood's Jessica Alba was incredibly pretty, she was hot and sexy. But after she got pregnant, I felt that the dreams of the past became much more flavorful."

Mo Qianni almost puked blood all over the steering wheel. If it wasn't because she had to step on the accelerator, she really wanted to kick this shameless fellow off!

The rest of the journey was awkwardly silent, there was only the English rock and roll and its relaxing beat.

When the car stopped, Mo Qianni finally spoke, "We've arrived, get out."

Yang Chen bewilderedly looked out of the window, and suspected that he might be wrong about something, he couldn't help but point at that signboard with neon lights asking, "Are you sure we're eating at that place?"

“Am I not allowed to?” Mo Qianni asked with an unkind expression.

Yang Chen shook his head, “I’m just curious as to why you would eat at a place like this. I thought you would bring me to some classy restaurant, and have some western or French meal or something, befitting your status.”

“I just like to eat at food stalls, I even like to eat street food. Unfortunately you guessed wrong.” Mo Qianni glared at Yang Chen, “Get out!”

Food stall? Fine then. Yang Chen didn’t mind as long as there was someone to settle the bill for him, because he didn’t bring a wallet.

Along the riverside in Zhong Hai’s suburbs, the food stall’s business was so prosperous like a long dragon, one cannot see the end of it with a single glance. The many colors of tents were supported using bamboo or metal poles, and had many different sizes.

The brilliant colors of the neon lamps made the food stalls’ signs show up bright and clear. The street had an unending flow of people walking by, but what made Yang Chen a little surprised was, majority of them were Zhong Hai city center’s white collar workers. Many of them wore western suits here, there were also those who were afraid of heat and hung their ties on their hands, chit-chatting on the streets as they walked.

The river’s wind slightly eased the heat at this time, so it wasn’t that insufferable, it also made the area’s air quality better. However, the smell of seafood, fruits and vegetables still gave this place the distinctive smell of the earth. Perhaps this was also what these people from the city needed.

But no matter how bustling it was, Mo Qianni, who walked amongst them in her black cotton dress remained as beautiful as ever.

If she didn’t open her eyes wide and criticize somebody, Mo Qianni was indeed a really alluring, beautiful woman. She was dignified and elegant, walked nimbly, had a slim waist, and had a great butt that obviously provoked daydreams.

Walking with a woman like that, Yang Chen easily received numerous gazes of jealousy from other males.

“Do you visit here often?” Yang Chen casually asked. He didn’t know there was a place like this in Zhong Hai, it was new fresh and he looked around curiously.

Mo Qianni nodded, “I used to be a regular, but I haven’t come here for a long time.”

“There’re so many of them, which are we going to?” Yang Chen realized that there were so many food stalls to the point that it can make one dizzy. Although they looked similar, there was a discernible difference between their standards when it came to cooking.

Mo Qianni shot him a glance, and said, “Just follow me.”

Yang Chen did not ask more, he realized that Mo Qianni became much quieter after they arrived at this place. It wasn’t her usual kind of silence, it was like there was something on her mind, as if she was recalling something.

After walking for about 8 minutes, under Mo Qianni’s lead, Yang Chen walked into a stall bearing the name “Xiang’s Chuan Food Stall” which was obviously a food stall that served Sichuan cuisine.

In the shop, a slightly chubby lady with gray hair noticed Mo Qianni, and revealed a happy expression as she walked to her, “Ni-zi, you haven’t come for a long time, I missed you so much!”

[TL: adding a zi to the last part of somebody’s name is a term of endearment, like sasuke-kun.]

Mo Qianni also revealed a warm and sincere smile, walked up to the lady and gave her a hug, she didn’t even care about possibly getting dirty from the oil and grease on the lady’s clothing.

“Sis Xiang, I’ve been busy lately, and I’m treating my friend to a meal today, so I came here to find you.” Mo Qianni held Sis Xiang’s hand as she smiled and said.

Sis Xiang glanced over to Yang Chen who stood behind Mo Qianni with a weird smile, like she understood something, “Girl, this is your boyfriend, right? What treating your friend to a meal, you didn’t even tell me, Sis Xiang, that you found a boyfriend!”

Mo Qianni blushed, and hastily waved her hand, “That’s not it Sis Xiang, he is my good friend’s husband, and is also my colleague. Today he helped me out with something, which is why I’m treating him to a meal.”

“So that’s what happened……” Sis Xiang regretfully smiled, then greeted, “Ni-zi’s friend please don’t be courteous, take a seat. It’s your first time here, Sis will cook some good food for you, free of charge!”

Yang Chen thanked her, and after they found an empty table and sat down, Sis Xiang served tea, then went back to work in the kitchenette.

“You’re very familiar with the boss, is she your relative?” Yang Chen curiously asked.

Mo Qianni drank a cup of tea, rubbed away the beads of sweat on her forehead, and replied, “We’re both from the same village. Years ago, when I first came to Zhong Hai I wasn’t familiar with this place, and she helped me out a lot; she’s a nice person.”

“So you’re from Sichuan.” Yang Chen was quite surprised, “Previously at the hospital, you said that you’ve known Ruoxi for many years. Doesn’t that mean that you came to Zhong Hai by yourself when you were 13 or 14 years old?”

“What, is that strange?” Mo Qianni replied with a question.

Yang Chen shook his head, “I’m just impressed, for a 13 or 14 years old girl to come to a big city like this all by herself, yet somehow managed to get up to a position like that in a few years. But why would your parents allow you to come here by yourself?”

Mo Qianni’s face darkened, she softly said, “My hometown is in the mountains, it’s destitute there, all year round we depend on several tenths of a hectare to survive. My dad died due to illness when I was thirteen, when he died I didn’t even know what illness he died to. My mother had difficulty raising me, so she remarried another man in the village.

Yang Chen had difficulty finding a word to say, he didn’t expect that behind the bright and beautiful Mo Qianni was such a murky past.

“You don’t agree with your mom’s remarriage, so you left the village alone?” After a brief moment of silence, Yang Chen asked.

“No.” Mo Qianni turned her head away, and her hand rubbed the corner of her eyes. She said, “Anyways, I have my reasons for leaving that place. Besides, that place doesn’t have a junior high, high school, and obviously no university. I didn’t

want to waste my whole life there.”

Yang Chen noticed that Mo Qianni’s eyes had turned red, and knew that she didn’t like to think of those matters. So he didn’t continue with questions on that topic, and asked, “For you to bring me here for a meal, it can’t be just to reminisce about your hometown, right?”

Mo Qianni rolled her eyes at Yang Chen, “The dishes Sis Xiang cooks taste pretty good. Although bringing you here is also for me to see her, it is also to thank you for saving me today.”

“I just did what I should, among the two of you, one is my wife and the other is my superior, I can’t possibly leave you alone when you’re in peril.” Yang Chen honestly stated.

“Whether you should save is your problem, while thanking you is my problem. As for Ruoxi, she’s already unfortunate enough being your wife, so there’s no need for her to thank you with a meal like I do.” Mo Qianni replied like it was a matter of fact.

“Hey, how can you be like this, what do you mean by unfortunate being my wife?” Yang Chen gloomily said, “Is marrying me so terrible? I already put my life on the line to save her, such an honorable husband!”

Mo Qianni said, “For you to save her is something you ought to do, and is a totally different matter from whether or not you deserve her. Other than playing games and acting like a rogue, what else do you usually do? You don’t have motivation, ambition and more so don’t have any good qualities. Graduating from Harvard and knowing so many foreign language is all in vain. In this world, it isn’t the ones who don’t have capability that is disgraceful, it is the ones who obviously have the capability yet do not put in any effort!”

Yang Chen was completely stunned by this evaluation, and was nearly convinced that he was too disgraceful. *It’s no wonder that this girl can become the head of PR, she’s so good at talking!*

Chapter 73: Can I hug you

“What? Can’t speak a word? Have you realized how terrible you are?” Mo Qianni pursued in asking.

“I’m not going to argue with you about this, you can think however you want. Besides, this wasn’t a marriage that I wanted, some things can’t be explained in a few words.” Yang Chen laughed in a carefree manner.

Mo Qianni immediately fumed with rage, “I’m only saying all these things to you because I want to help you get promoted. You’re obviously not stupid, and you’re even more intelligent than most people, this can be seen from the fact that you understand so many foreign languages. But why can’t you properly work hard for your career, and strive to perform like other men in the workplace? Do you want to live off a woman for your entire life!? Even if Ruoxi is just taking you as a shield for other men to see, sooner or later there will be a day where she doesn’t need you anymore, what will you do then?”

“Living off a woman is also pretty good.” Yang Chen contently nodded, “Right now, aren’t I driving my wife’s car, living in my wife’s home? I think my life is pretty good. If some day she truly doesn’t need me by her side, I can just go back to selling mutton skewers.”

“You.....” Mo Qianni was filled with anger but had no way to release it. She offered earnest and sincere advice for his own good, yet he didn’t seem to give a damn.

Only after taking a few deep breaths did Mo Qianni ease the tension on her chest, but the more she saw the face of the person in front of her the more pissed she got. Therefore, she called out towards Sis Xiang, “Sis Xiang, bring two bottles of dry wine, the high alcohol content type!”

Sis Xiang was cooking, and consented with a smile after she heard Mo Qianni.

“White liquor? It can’t be Kaoliang wine, right?” Yang Chen still wasn’t familiar with the local drinks.

“Yeah, if I don’t drink I’d be stifled to death by you, you rogue!” Mo Qianni glared at Yang Chen.

Sis Xiang seemed to know that Mo Qianni could eat spicy food, and could drink. So when she served the dishes, it didn’t matter whether it was seafood or vegetables, all were doused in copious amounts of chili oil. As for the two unlabelled bottles of liquor, with one look it was obvious that it’s a cheap yet strong white liquor.

“Can you hold your liquor?” Mo Qianni opened a bottle, and turned to ask Yang Chen.

Yang Chen felt a little dizzy when he tried sniffing at the bottle, while overseas he drank quite a lot of western liquor, and often drank wine. But a scorchingly strong liquor like this with high concentration was something he rarely came into contact with. Seeing Mo Qianni’s ‘this lady is great at drinking’ expression, he couldn’t help but bitterly smile as he answered, “I’ll drink less, I’m not used to this.”

“So unmanly.” Mo Qianni sneered as she poured some into Yang Chen’s shot glass.

Sis Xiang had to take care of her other customers, so after chattering with Mo Qianni for a while, she went elsewhere to do her business. Leaving the two sitting in the corner of the food stall, eating spicy Sichuan cuisine, and drinking liquor with high alcohol content.

As night fell, the streetlights by the river meandered without end.

The inverted reflection of the bright white moon hanging in the sky shone on the river, adorned with countless stars and rippling from the movement of the waters, as if the Milky Way descended upon mortal soil.

The cool wind blew with a whistle that wasn’t ear-piercing.

Yang Chen ate the Ma La dishes, sipped on the scalding liquor, and gradually felt that the surroundings were full of warmth, with his mind exceedingly relaxed, causing him to be somewhat entranced.

Isn’t this the life he yearned for?

There's liquor, there's meat, and all kinds of people passing by in his surroundings. He could feel the wind blow, the swaying of the trees, the sound of the river flowing, and the noise from the insects. All of these seemed so beautiful, and was worth looking forward to.

After some time, Yang Chen returned to his senses. When he once again looked at Mo Qianni, he was stunned.

Mo Qianni had already drunk a whole bottle of white liquor, it was at least half a liter, and her tender face was flushed from the alcohol. Her exquisitely fair skin seemed particularly rosy and alluring under the lights.

The woman's eyes were as clear as spring water, as she quietly stared at the dishes on the table, yet she didn't move her chopsticks, she just held the shot glass in her hand like she was in a daze.

"This is enough, do you always drink this much?" Yang Chen felt that for a woman, drinking half a liter of highly concentrated white liquor was a lot.

Looking a little frail, Mo Qianni glanced at Yang Chen and was obviously a little drunk. She shook her head, and with a vague voice she said, "In the past there wasn't anybody that could accompany me here, I can't drink this much alone."

"Don't you have friends?" Yang Chen curiously asked.

Mo Qianni chuckled like a blossoming safflower, "Among our friends from Yu Lei International's PR Department, which of them do you think will like coming to a dirty food stall to eat?"

Yang Chen was speechless, it was true that with Mo Qianni's current status, without even considering whether or not those people who befriend her are truly her friends, in that circle, who would come to a noisy place like this to eat without a reason? They would only think that coming to a place like this would lower their social status, and make them lose face.

"That means that it's my honor to be the first person to accompany you for a meal here." Yang Chen self-mockingly declared.

"And also the first man I asked out." Mo Qianni smart and wittily said, "When other men invite me for a meal I don't even entertain them y'know?"

“Fortunately, it’s a food stall, if it was somewhere else and we were caught, I’d become the public enemy of men.” Yang Chen said.

“Isn’t that great? I think the food here is better than those in five-star hotels.” Mo Qianni grinned, she seemed rather joyful.

Yang Chen nodded, although a little spicy, the dishes here had more life, this was something that he was also fond of.

As the two chatted, Mo Qianni’s phone that rested on the table vibrated. Mo Qianni gracefully picked up the phone to see who called, and paused for a brief moment. She then picked up the call.

“Mom..... Yep..... I got it, I will..... Okay..... You take good care of your health.....”

After hanging up with a tranquil expression, Mo Qianni put her phone to a side, grabbed the shot glass, and finished what remained in it.

Yang Chen witnessed everything, and asked in befuddlement, “Your mom called?”

Mo Qianni looked at him and nodded, “Didn’t you hear it?”

“Is there some pressing matter?”

“No.”

“Do you need help?”

“Nope.”

“You seem to be in a bad mood.”

“You’re really annoying!” Mo Qianni impatiently frowned as she spoke.

Yang Chen awkwardly smiled, “I’m full, you?”

“Then let’s go.” Mo Qianni didn’t drag on, she picked up her personal belongings and left her seat.

Although Sis Xiang repeatedly declined, Mo Qianni still paid, and even stuffed a few hundred dollars more for Sis Xiang. Saying that it was for Sis Xiang’s children. Sis Xiang seemed to understand Mo Qianni’s crabby temperament, and since she couldn’t keep declining forever, she could only accept it.

When the two walked back towards the car park, Mo Qianni was a little preoccupied, and quietly walked forward.

When they reached the car, the surrounding cobblestone appeared spacious and still under the dusky street lights.

Suddenly, Mo Qianni turned around, her limpid eyes stared fixedly at Yang Chen. Under the night lights, her pretty face looked a lot more exhausted.

“What’s wrong?” Yang Chen felt that something was going on with Mo Qianni, but he could never guess what a woman was thinking, so he had no choice but to remain silent with her.

“Can I hug you.....”

“What?”

Mo Qianni replied Yang Chen with open arms and a hug.

Yang Chen didn’t reject or dodge it, when Mo Qianni’s cool and smooth arms wrapped around his neck, a sweet body scent entered his nose along with the smell of alcohol. While below his chest, Yang Chen could clearly feel Mo Qianni’s pair of large round lumps, flexible yet soft.

Hesitating for a while, Yang Chen sighed, sympathetically opened his arms, and held Mo Qianni’s jade back, gently stroking it.

In this night the two were like a pair of lovers, embracing in a deserted place, enjoying their time together that was hard to come by.

“Actually, you can tell me if there’s something wrong, perhaps I can help you, like I did during the day.” Yang Chen muttered.

Mo Qianni burrowed her face into Yang Chen’s chest, rubbed on it a little, and equivocally replied, “Don’t say anything, don’t ask anything, just let me hug for a while, a while is enough.....”

In a daze, this embrace seemed to last very long, but when the two separated, they felt that only a moment passed.

Mo Qianni stroked her hair, a little red in the face as she bashfully looked at Yang Chen, “Thank you, let’s go back.”

“For a beauty to throw herself into my arms, I consider that a blessing.”

“I know that you didn’t have such thoughts.” It was unknown whether it was intentional as Mo Qianni looked at Yang Chen’s bottom, “Unless you don’t have that capability.”

Yang Chen’s face froze. *These days, trying to be a clean and honest man is hard, this woman is too naughty, she’s even taking note of any physiological changes on me!*

After returning to Yu Lei International in Mo Qianni’s car, Yang Chen said goodbye to her, then hastily drove back to the hospital. Although Lin Ruoxi said that she had completely given up on her father, Lin Kun, she still had to be informed of Lin Kun going insane.

It was already past 10 in the evening when he arrived at the hospital. Other than the nurses on duty, there was practically no one else to be seen. When he walked up to the door of Lin Ruoxi’s ward, he noticed that the lights were still on, and thought that Lin Ruoxi was still awake. When he opened the door, he realized he guessed wrongly.

The table lamp on the bedside table was on, but Lin Ruoxi who laid on the bed was fast asleep, sleeping sideways on the pillow, in her hands was a book regarding the market’s economy. On her upper body she wore a pair of loose blue pajamas with white lines, and her messy hair covered half her face, revealing a delicate side to her that cannot be seen during ordinary times.

It was difficult to imagine that a young lady like this was the CEO of a well-known company, on her thin and weak shoulders she bore the burden of thousands of employees worldwide.

When he thought of this, Yang Chen admired his own wife.

Feeling that the air-conditioning in the room was a little cold, Yang Chen noticed that Lin Ruoxi fell asleep while reading a book, the upper half of her body was out of the blanket, and he couldn’t help but worry that she might catch a cold.

Thinking for a moment, he stealthily walked to the side of the bed, calmly supported Lin Ruoxi’s head, removed the back cushion, then let Lin Ruoxi’s head

rest against the pillow below.

Subsequently, he slowly pulled the blanket up till it covered Lin Ruoxi's shoulders, then carefully tucked it into the sides of the bed, ensuring no cold air entered.

Right at this moment, the sleeping Lin Ruoxi drowsily opened her eyes, and looked at Yang Chen with a little confusion.

Despite her just quietly staring at him, Yang Chen could feel the depth and clarity within that pair of eyes, and couldn't help but blankly stare back.

§

Chapter 74: An unwelcome visitor

Actually, Lin Ruoxi noticed Yang Chen's presence from the moment he entered. Because she had received the burden of the company from her grandmother at such a young age, she's always wrapped up in work, and always on edge. Her phone was never off, and she never enters a deep sleep.

Yang Chen's gentle and considerate actions made her want to remain asleep, for she didn't know how to react to being taken care of by a man; yet she also felt that to continue pretending to be asleep was inappropriate, she had to confront this situation sooner or later.

"Erm..... Did I wake you up?" Yang Chen returned to his senses, and felt helpless. He felt that he was stealthy enough, and didn't expect to wake her up.

Looking at Yang Chen silently, Lin Ruoxi blinked and softly asked, "Qianni should've asked you out, how is she?"

"What do you mean how?" Yang Chen was puzzled how her first sentence was about Mo Qianni.

"She's in a bad mood today." Lin Ruoxi replied.

"Of course it would be bad." Yang Chen sat on the stool on side of the bed with a smile, "After getting kidnapped, was she supposed to be in a good mood?"

"It's something else." Lin Ruoxi replied with certainty.

Yang Chen wrinkled his eyebrows, and thought of the phone call Mo Qianni received while they were having dinner, "Is it regarding her family?"

"All I know is she has a family member coming, and she's in a bad mood."

"Indeed, she was in a bad mood, but it should be fine now." Yang Chen naturally wouldn't say that he embraced her in front of his wife, even if this icy lady doesn't care.

After Lin Ruoxi replied with a "En" sound, she once again closed her eyes, which was a clear message that meant — I want to sleep, you should leave.

Yang Chen bitterly smiled, he still had something to talk about, hence he said, "There's something else I need to tell you, which is also why I came. Don't get too agitated when you hear it, it's about Lin Kun."

Lin Ruoxi opened her eyes again, but she didn't speak a word, and just waited for Yang Chen to speak.

"He's gone mad, perhaps it's because he couldn't bear failing. He has entered a mental hospital." Yang Chen bluntly said.

Lin Ruoxi's body clearly trembled, but she immediately turned her body away from Yang Chen, then said, "I got it, you may leave."

Yang Chen knew that she needed some time alone, so he left the room understandingly.

o

For the next few days, Yang Chen's life was tranquil and cozy, he continued to bring breakfast for the ladies in the office every morning.

After going through some ambiguous matters, he was now much closer to the three women, Zhao Hongyan, Liu Mingyu and Zhang Cai. Occasionally teasing them and flirting with them till they coquettishly pout and hit him was something that was of greatest pleasure to Yang Chen, other than his gaming career.

Knowing his place, Department Head Ma no longer harassed the ladies in the PR Department. According to Liu Mingyu, that old fella has already submitted his resignation letter to the board of directors and intends to retire after handing over his duties to somebody else.

Mo Qianni also returned to her usual work schedule, other than her original post, she also held the position of being the company's vice-chairman. Originally, there wasn't the position of a vice-chairman, because Lin Ruoxi was incredibly formidable and didn't need a vice-chairman or even an assistant.

However, once Lin Ruoxi fell sick, many matters couldn't come to a conclusion in the company. Therefore, Lin Ruoxi issued a series of commands from the hospital, allowing the usual tasks to be decided by Mo Qianni, while the cold airport runway CEO's secretary Wu Yue assists.

Mo Qianni may be young, but many elders in the company were aware of her relationship with the previous CEO and the current CEO. Yu Lei International could be considered as the private property of the Lin family, so Lin Ruoxi's words always held enormous weight.

An interesting thing happened in the midst of all these occurrences. After discussion with fellow colleagues, many groups were formed to pay a visit to Lin Ruoxi.

This was something out of Yang Chen's expectations, because Lin Ruoxi usually maintained a cold countenance with a look that says do not come near, practically no employee had dared to initiate a conversation with her. But unexpectedly, the moment Lin Ruoxi was hospitalised, everybody fervently cared about visiting her.

In the PR Department, the ladies also prepared gifts that were meticulously selected. They sent various health and skincare products to the hospital, and even ordered a large bouquet of carnations.

One of the PR ladies even brought a camera with her to the hospital and took a photo of Lin Ruoxi.

On this photo, without any makeup and under the bright lights, Lin Ruoxi held a book in her hands, and looked at her employees with a limpid gaze. The attitude of a nonchalant beauty emitted from her bones made a bunch of female employees with tendencies to 'chase stars' shriek. They were incredibly envious that the CEO didn't need any makeup as her skin and face was so perfect, so much so that she may be prettier without makeup.

At this time, Yang Chen noticed something, beauties are always welcome, while beauties that issue paychecks are even more welcome!

Of course, other than the company's employees, many figures in Zhong Hai's business world took this opportunity to visit. Lin Ruoxi, who had originally wanted to recuperate with a low-profile had to mentally prepare herself by drinking Chinese medicine while conversing with the smiling tigers that she usually tries to avoid.

As he needed to deliberately keep their husband and wife relationship a secret, the amount of time Yang Chen spent in the hospital drastically decreased. But

right on the second week, as he sent new books to Lin Ruoxi, Yang Chen ran into a visitor he didn't really want to meet.

The one who came to Lin Ruoxi's ward, was someone who Yang Chen met twice, and who left unhappy memories, the police officer Cai Yan.

As of that moment, Cai Yan was in casual clothes. She wore a white close-fitting short-sleeved Levi's T-shirt, causing her tall mountain range and slim waist seem all the more conspicuous. For her bottoms she wore dull blue denim shorts, below her long and fair legs with no excess flab was a pair of pink Nike shoes. She had neat short hair and a charming face that matched well with her tall and developed body. She didn't look a teeny bit like she had an identity of being the West Region Police Bureau Chief, and looked more like a well-developed housewife, a sexy city beauty.

When Cai Yan appeared at the room's door, Yang Chen suspected that he was seeing things, but when he then looked at the profound smile on Cai Yan's beautiful face, Yang Chen was convinced he didn't see a ghost this night.

"A rare guest, Police Chief Cai has come." Yang Chen smiled and greeted.

"I know that you actually don't welcome me, but I'm here to see Ruoxi." Cai Yan glanced at Yang Chen, directly walked to Lin Ruoxi's bedside and looked worriedly at her, "I told you not to work so hard, but you just wouldn't treasure yourself."

It was obvious Lin Ruoxi recognized and was familiar with Cai Yan, because she revealed a slight but rarely seen smile. Pointing at what was in Cai Yan's hand, she asked, "Is that a present for me?"

In Cai Yan's hand was a gift for a patient, but it wasn't fruits, wasn't flowers, and more so wasn't some thousand-year-old ginseng from the Baekdu mountains, or wild Yunnan lingzhi.

It was a box of glutinous rice balls.

"Yeah, I at least know you this well, you've always liked eating this since you were young, so I didn't bring anything else." Said Cai Yan, she then put the beautifully wrapped sesame glutinous rice balls onto the bedside table.

"Thanks." Lin Ruoxi softly said.

Cai Yan pouted, then pretended to be angry as she said, “There’s no need for thanks, I actually didn’t intend to come at all previously. You have no conscience, you didn’t even inform me, your sister that you got married, being childhood friends was all in vain.”

Lin Ruoxi lowered her head and didn’t make a sound, she chose to remain silent.

Cai Yan seemed to understand her character, then minding her own business she said, “But I truly never expected, that the man you asked Lawyer Zhang to bring away that day would become your husband, when did you guys begin dating? Why was I totally in the dark?”

Lin Ruoxi continued to lower her head with silence, fact was she herself didn’t know what to say.

Cai Yan knew that there was no way to continue on this topic, and helplessly pouted, “Fine, you’ve always been like this, keeping silent the moment you bump into a crucial question. There’s actually one more thing I came here to tell you about, your grandpa says he misses you, and wants you to take good care of yourself.”

Hearing the word “grandpa”, Lin Ruoxi abruptly raised her head and coldly said, “I don’t need his concern, moreover I don’t have a grandpa, I haven’t since a long time ago.

“Actually Grandpa Lin has his own difficulties.....” Cai Yan bitterly smiled, and tried to explain.

“Yanyan, don’t talk about that anymore, I don’t want to hear it.” Lin Ruoxi turned her head away.

Yang Chen who sat by the side listening to their conversation was rather baffled, Lin Ruoxi actually had a grandpa. But why hasn’t she spoken a word about him before? Moreover she and Cai Yan have known each other since they were young, so the two parties’ relationship should definitely be good. In addition, Cai Yan even knew of matters regarding Lin Ruoxi’s grandpa, so it’s obvious that Cai Yan knew quite a lot of secret matters.

However, looking at Lin Ruoxi’s expression, it seemed like she doesn’t like that

grandpa of hers very much, rather, there was intense rejection. According to reason, after her grandma passed away and her father went insane, if this grandfather existed he would be her only living kin, but why would she loathe him so much?

Seeing that Lin Ruoxi was in a bad mood, Cai Yan sighed. She could only drop the subject. She mentioned some of the greetings from the elders in her family, then got up to leave.

Noticing Yang Chen standing by the door, there was a glint in her eye as she said, "Ruoxi's husband, do you mind sending me out?"

"Erm....." *I knew that it wouldn't be anything good.* Yang Chen muttered inside, while there was a smile on his face as he said, "Of course, Bureau Chief Cai, please."

After Cai Yan walked to the door, Yang Chen planned to find an excuse to slip away, but Cai Yan called out to him, and got straight to the point as she said, "Yang Chen, I have something to ask you."

"Is Bureau Chief Cai inquiring a suspect?" Yang Chen bitterly smiled.

Cai Yan wore a grave expression, she didn't seem to be making a joke, "So what if I am, that day, at Chen Dehai's house the Chen Residences, those things were done by you, right?"

"Chen Dehai? Chen Residences? What's that?" Naturally, Yang Chen immediately denied, and feigned ignorance.

"Don't play dumb, when you passed by that area that day, it was exactly the same time as when the suspect left the scene. Furthermore, according to reports from our police insiders, that murderer's reported appearance is fundamentally the same as yours."

"Bureau Chief Cai, I don't have the slightest idea of what you're talking about." Yang Chen raised his hands, "There must be evidence before you speak, I'm a good citizen that follows the law."

Cai Yan snorted then said, "Don't try to con me, it doesn't matter whether you admit to it or not, the day will come where I find proof and send you to jail. As for why you married Ruoxi, I will also investigate the truth. If you dare to do

anything excessive to Ruoxi, look out for your head! Even if I don't punish you, if you harm Ruoxi, you will definitely die without even knowing how you died!"

Yang Chen swallowed his saliva, smiled and slowly said, "There's no need to exaggerate so much, right? How can marrying a wife be so frightful, I admit that my wife is a little prettier than others', but is it my fault for being kind and honest?"

"Shameless." Cai Yan glared at Yang Chen for a moment, then turned around and left in a jiffy.

Yang Chen breathed in a breath of relief, distressed about how to handle this beautiful lady officer. He slowly walked back into the ward, but the moment he entered, he saw an incomparably cute scene.

Chapter 75: Hubby I'm scared

That box of glutinous rice balls was already open, and Lin Ruoxi had extracted a white ball out of it, pinching onto it with her thumb and forefinger of both hands, while slowly nibbling it. She looked so lovely, like a little white rabbit nibbling on its carrot during meal time.

Seeing Yang Chen enter, Lin Ruoxi blushed; she was still chewing the glutinous rice ball in her mouth. After a few blinks, she said with a vague and soft voice, "I thought you left....."

"I couldn't bear to leave, otherwise I would miss the cute way my lord wife eats glutinous rice balls." Yang Chen playfully smiled as he spoke.

Lin Ruoxi's face turned redder, yet she still wasn't willing to put down the half-eaten glutinous rice ball, so she just ignored Yang Chen, and continued to nibble in relish.

Actually, this ice lady had a really cute side to her, previously Yang Chen discovered that she likes watching Korean romance dramas, and now he discovered that she likes eating glutinous rice balls. Furthermore, the way she ate was also very child-like. Perhaps under that ice-cold countenance, Lin Ruoxi had a more childish heart than other girls of the same age.

After he left the ward, Yang Chen thought for a bit, and decided to call Rose. Many days had passed since he last contacted this enchanting beauty, firstly because many abrupt things happened, and secondly he knew that Rose was very busy these days. Now that the situation has turned stable, he began to think of that thoughtful woman.

The phone rang thrice before connecting, while Rose's voice was as charming as ever, "Hubby, you finally remembered to call me?" In her tone was a little bitterness and tantrum.

"I've been busy, and I know that you've also been busy. Yang Chen felt a fire burning in his heart after he heard her voice, and then said, "Are you home? I'll come find you tonight."

“You always come at night, can’t you come see me during daytime?”

“Erm..... I have work during the day, but next weekend I’ll see you during the day.” Yang Chen pledged.

“Gege.....” Rose happily chuckled, “I’m not home, but if you’re willing, hubby you can come to Karnidi night club, south of the city. If you make it in time, there will be a good show to watch.”

Although he didn’t know what the good show was, Yang Chen still agreed, and quickly drove towards Karnidi in the south of the west region of the city.

In fact this nightclub was rather famous even in the west district. But because it has not been renovated for many years, it gradually lost business, while its security also did not keep up, and it gradually became one of the most chaotic night clubs.

But none of these were important, what was important was that this nightclub was positioned on the boundary between the territories belonging to the two big west region gangs, the West Union Society and the Red Thorns Society. It was currently West Union Society’s territory, so there was only one reason Rose would appear there, which is to snatch territory.

When he arrived at the Karnidi nightclub’s entrance, Yang Chen was stunned, because at the nightclub’s entrance ahead, the familiar figure of Rose was leading a large group of men in black out.

There was a middle-aged man wearing a white suit beside Rose, saying something in a flattering manner. Rose’s indifferently nodded from time to time, until she arrived at the car park and saw Yang Chen. She said something to that person, then walked towards Yang Chen alone.

She wore a black tailored dress, and a skinny white bootcut-style pants, it was a rare sight for her to have tied her hair up. Under the night lights the slim and graceful Rose looked like a dainty black rose.

“Where’s the good show?” Asked Yang Chen.

Rose smiled like a flower, it seemed like she was in a good mood. She didn’t reply, and instead walked up to Yang Chen with open arms and embraced him from his neck, her captivating scarlet lips tightly stuck onto his.

Yang Chen naturally wouldn't reject the beauty's sweet greeting, and kissed the tender flowery lips, he nimbly stuck out his tongue and twined with the lilac in Rose's mouth. The unending sweetness in her mouth quietly flowed into his.

Only until the beautiful woman he was kissing in his arms was short of breath did Yang Chen slowly released his arms, and make a quick kiss onto Rose's forehead.

"The good show that you mentioned can't be this french kiss, right?" Yang Chen asked with a smile as he caressed Rose's smooth and clean face.

"Do you dislike it?"

"It's just a little different from what I imagined, I thought there would be a great spectacle." Yang Chen honestly replied.

Rose wittily blinked, and said, "Hubby you came late, the great spectacle ended 10 minutes ago."

"Then why did you still call me here to look?" Yang Chen's eyes were open wide.

Rose innocently revealed a wronged look in her eyes, "I want you to send me home, you've never picked me up before."

The underworld female boss was like a little girl acting like a spoilt child wanting her boyfriend to drive her home, Yang Chen felt that this scene was rather ironic, but because it's also Rose's little wish, he felt somewhat ashamed of his conduct and deeds/ himself.

"Alright, don't look like this, obediently get in the car and we'll continue on the road." Yang Chen smacked Rose's flexible and well rounded butt, and said with a smile.

Rose immediately hit Yang Chen with a soft punch, and bashfully said, "Don't be like this, those subordinates of mine are still watching, you're not allowed to hit my butt in front of them!"

"Che, that's nothing." Yang Chen laughed without a care, "Whether I hit my woman's butt or not has nothing to do with them, whoever can't accept this I'll kill."

“Full of drivel.” Rose felt happy when she heard Yang Chen say ‘my woman’ earlier, but still rolled her eyes at him in an aloof manner, and very quickly got into the car.

Late at night, on the journey back to the bar it was rare to see other cars on the road, on the sides desolate road were lines of trees. Occasionally, there were small night vendor stands in some empty spaces.

Yang Chen wasn’t in a hurry, and chatted with Rose while driving.

Rose narrated what happened in the Karnidi nightclub, “.....The man in white who spoke to me earlier was Karnidi’s manager, because the money invested by West Union Society to that place is too little, they can no longer make ends meet, so the day before he took the initiative to contact me, hoping to rely on our Red Thorns Society. I had him hand over the two small gang leaders assigned there. One of them is called Four-eyed Wolf, the other is called Flower Eagle. As long as he ties them up and hand them over to me, I will trust him and also invest into a renovation for Karnidi, while providing people to protect his business.

“Did he agree?”

“Fact is, he has to agree. The one who was originally responsible for providing him funds was none other than the one you killed, Chen Dehai. As of present, Chen Dehai’s position is taken over by Zhang Hu, while under my instructions, Zhang Hu selectively neglected a bunch of people, and invested into people I selected for him. It’s only natural that Karnidi can no longer stay afloat.” Rose’s smile was like a beautiful little fox.

Yang Chen gasped in admiration, then said, “Using this plan, on the surface West Union Society’s territory isn’t shrinking, but in reality once the people of West Union Society finds out, they will realize that they aren’t actually exchanging territories of an equal size, and are instead making losses in multiple folds. By that time it would already be too late.”

“The only pity was that only Flower Eagle was caught, while Four-eyed Wolf managed to escape, along with a large sum of money, but at least not much blood was spilled to stably procure this piece of territory. A small slip-up like this is negligible.” Said Rose as she faced Yang Chen.

“That may not be true.” Yang Chen suddenly let loose a weird smile, “Perhaps there would be a perfect/happy ending.”

“What?”

Rose was bewildered, while the car suddenly came to a screeching halt by the side of the road.

§

Chapter 75-2: Hubby I'm scared

“Look at what’s ahead.” Yang Chen pointed at a spot not too far away from the windscreen.

In the middle of the road ahead were two Ford pickups, these large pickups have gone through modifications, with high suspension, and extremely loud exhausts. The pickup’s HID headlights shined the path in front of it, being incredibly bright while lighting up the whole road, making it seem like it was daytime.

“It’s Four-eyed Wolf, he came back.” Rose was able make out the figure who stood in front.

It was a skinny man wearing glasses, his hair was gelled up high and he wore a white sleeveless shirt, revealing his shriveled muscles. By his side stood 8 large men that were more robust than him, but he was still their leader.

“Four-eyed Wolf himself isn’t good at fighting, but he has an intelligent mind. It seems like he had sent a scout to keep a close watch over what went on at Karnidi. Once he discovered that I returned alone with you, he planned to bully a weak lady like me.....” Rose calmly analyzed.

Baffled, Yang Chen asked, “Does he not know of how skillful you are?”

“His position in West Union Society is not high enough to know about this, so he thought that these people would be enough to hold me down, and turn the tides himself.” Rose laughed as she said.

“He’s really ‘innocent’ but not cute.” Yang Chen evaluated.

Rose suddenly yelped, and jumped into Yang Chen’s bosom from her seat, with a soft and coquettish voice she said, “Hubby I’m scared, you must protect me.....”

Hearing the words ‘hubby I’m scared’ that could turn his bones soft, Yang Chen felt blood rushing to his head, and smacked Rose’s fleshy butt, laughing while he scolded, “Don’t stimulate me, if you tempt me like this again, I’ll eat you

up in the car before we return home!”

“That’s fine, but hubby look, it seems like they want to wreck our car.” Rose angrily said.

Yang Chen sighed, this woman was turning more and more shrewd. Unfortunately, he himself had a big appetite and couldn’t endure much temptation, perhaps it was because he truly liked her, which made it all the more difficult to resist.

“Fine fine, get up first, I’ll go get rid of them. It’s better to save my car from getting wrecked, for I don’t have any money to repair it.”

Four-eyed Wolf thought that this would be a brilliant counterattack by him, but it did not bring about any success, it instead resulted in him and his 8 subordinates knocked down onto the ground. The two pickups he previously used to escape were taken by the people of Red Thorns Society that rushed over. As for the money he brought along with him, the result was obvious.

However, even after Four-eyed Wolf was packed into a sack and carried away by the people from Red Thorns Society, he couldn’t understand who this mysterious man who suddenly got out of that BMW was. Red Thorns Society definitely didn’t have a person like that, and he had never even heard of somebody who was this good at fighting in the entire Zhong Hai.

Four-eyed Wolf felt incredibly wronged, he wished that this was a competition, one that was a best of 3, because he still had a Type 54 handgun kept inside his pant’s pocket, and didn’t even have a chance to pull it out in that fight.....

It was a pity, that their fate was sealed from the moment those 8 people fell onto the ground. Stuffed into sack bags, tied onto a heavy slab of stone, and dropped into the sea along with the sack bags.

This incident that others would deem fatal did not affect the young couple’s mood. After Rose dealt with the aftermath and gave a call to Little Zhao, she and Yang Chen quickly returned to the large bedroom behind ROSE bar.

A night of intercourse, and Rose daringly welcomed it. Her sexy body allowed the hungry Yang Chen receive immense satisfaction.

In the end, after climaxing 6 times, Rose was out of strength, she weakly

crossed her beautiful legs, and lied on the bed. Seeing that Yang Chen wanted to battle after he just released again, she couldn't help but grab onto Yang Chen's back and scratch on it, protesting coquettishly, "It's not fair! How can a man last longer than a woman, this goes against science!"

"What could you possibly know about science theories? Before you met me you were still a virgin." Yang Chen spoke with disdain, and used one of his hands to toy with the ball of tender flesh on Rose's chest, forming it into various shapes with his fingers.

"Hmph, but I've seen many films online, the only reason they managed to film for such a long time was because those Japanese people in the films all had several men taking turns, how can the real thing still be like this after 2 hours....." Rose's cheeks were flushed as she lovably panted and spoke.

Yang Chen snickered in his heart, this body of his was unlike one belonging to a mere ordinary man, his ability to last in bed for so long was merely one of the 'side effects' when his body changed, perhaps this was the most mentally comforting ability from it.

But such things weren't suitable to be said to Rose, so Yang Chen said, "Which is why when I find many other women in the future, you'll all have to understand, after all I do possess this ability."

"Say that to your legal wife, as your mistress there's no way I can manage you." Rose bitterly said.

That girl Lin Ruoxi wouldn't care about how many women I find. Yang Chen muttered in his heart. Feeling like they've rested enough, he once again pounced onto Rose.....

o

When he woke up in the morning, Rose was naturally still dawdling in bed. So Yang Chen just put on his clothes and left.

As it was Sunday, Yang Chen who didn't need to go to work didn't go to the west region's food market. After he left ROSE bar, he instead drove his car to a wide street that was relatively clean, and ate a large bowl of ramen at a small ramen stall. Yang Chen pondered over whether he should go to the hospital to

accompany Lin Ruoxi, but once he thought of the likelihood that many people who he doesn't recognize would be visiting, he decided to drop that thought.

After he got out of the ramen stall, the number of people on the streets had increased. Yang Chen planned to drive his car back to the villa to watch TV and spend some of his time leisurely, but didn't expect that someone would suddenly shout his name beside him.

"Yang Chen!"

This was a sharp and clear voice, it was somewhat familiar, but he couldn't remember whose it was.

Yang Chen turned his head, and saw that the person walking over from the other side of the road was an unfamiliar young lady.

The young lady wore a bright yellow T-shirt, a pair of tight holey jeans, and a pair of dull green running shoes. Her black shoulder length hair was shiny, with a cute blue starfish hair clip. A pure and energetic face was bare without any makeup, while her brows revealed a natural charm. It's not hard to imagine that in a few years, this young lady would become truly lovely and enchanting.

"Are we acquainted?" Yang Chen truly couldn't remember being acquainted with a young girl like this, besides, although this little girl was rather young and her figure was still growing, she was still a beautiful woman, so there was no way that he would easily forget.

The young lady lively pouted, and proudly said, "I knew you wouldn't recognize me, this lady is naturally beautiful, all I did was change my appearance and now you are head over heels for me."

Seeing this haughty expression, Yang Chen felt that she was rather familiar, after examining her carefully, he noticed that on the back of this young lady's hand was a small purple butterfly tattoo, and immediately thought of someone. Sizing her up, he clicked his tongue and said, "I couldn't tell, as a little delinquent girl, you disguise rather well as a student, like you're Cecilia Cheung in the movie King of Comedy. Why didn't you tie a pair of twin pigtails?"

Chapter 76: Pregnant Teenager

That's right, the young lady here was the pitiful girl who was nearly frightened to death by Yang Chen when she drove a Porsche 911. If he remembered correctly, her name was TangTang. It was just that she dyed her hair back to black, and changed into more ordinary-looking clothes, along with a hairstyle like an obedient child, causing him to be unable to recognize her.

"What do you mean by disguising as a student? I'm a high school student through and through, and also a student of YiZhong since middle school. I guess I'm too radiant for your dog-like eyes!" TangTang stuck out her tongue.

Yang Chen didn't deny this, pouted and said, "So what's the matter?"

"How can you be like this with such an impatient face? A beauty took the initiative to start a conversation with you, can't you act more gentlemanly? You make it seem as though I'm a debt collector here to chase a debt!"

"We are people of different worlds, if there's something you want to say, say it, if you need to fart, let it out." Yang Chen had no interest in conversing with a bossy rich girl like her. That day, she made him angry and didn't even apologize, so he naturally wouldn't be polite.

"You....."

TangTang grinded her teeth in anger. Previously she had seen Yang Chen's godly driving skills, and his master-like style of martial arts when beating up people, therefore she was full of curiosity and wanted to befriend him. But she never expected this man to not show any appreciation towards her show of favor. *Who does he think he is? Does he really think I'm scared of him?*

TangTang who had never met such treatment before felt a burst of resentment in her heart, but while knowing that there was no way she was a match against this fella physically, and that even if she called for help it would just be like sending him punching bags. She changed her perspective, and suddenly thought

of a sly idea.....

After making her decision, TangTang's big and clear eyes gradually became misty, then her complexion seemed to turn pale. On her face tears flowed down as she sobbed, looking aggrieved and helpless.

"What happened?" Yang Chen was puzzled. *It can't be possible that this brat's ability to receive blows are so low, right? I haven't even scolded her, yet she's already crying?*

Yet TangTang was 'sobbing' while wiping away the tears. Suddenly, in view of all passersby, she wailed with a sharp voice, "Yang Chen! You heartless man! Throwing me away after I got pregnant! You don't have a conscience! Waa....."

Yang Chen was baffled, while all of the people on the streets bemusedly halted, and unanimously looked towards TangTang who bitterly shouted, with peculiar expressions.

All of a sudden, TangTang charged forward and hugged Yang Chen's waist, she wailed and rocked Yang Chen back and forth at the same time, as if her emotions were incredibly agitated.

"Wu wu..... Don't leave me Yang Chen! Don't abandon the child and me, what am I to do if you leave? Will our child be fatherless from the moment it's born..... Wu wu..... Are you going to be so heartless, to kick me away since you have a new lover..... Wu wu....."

TangTang cried like her organs were being torn apart, while the people in the surroundings began to point and blame, a number of motherly and aunt-like figures revealed faces of sympathy and remorse, sighing deeply. As for the rest, they looked at Yang Chen with disdain and hatred.

Yang Chen didn't know whether to laugh or to cry, this brat was truly adept at creating problems, how could such a thing be randomly joked about? However, someone who is bare-footed isn't afraid of those wearing shoes (meaning fearless), he never cared about his reputation from the start, what was there to be afraid of?

With a random thought, Yang Chen executed his plan. He suddenly stretched his hands to hug TangTang who was stuck to his chest, the exquisiteness and

flexibility of the young girl's soft waist could clearly be felt even with clothes in-between, and with more so the firmness and tightness that older women don't, feeling great to the touch.

TangTang felt Yang Chen's ardent hands holding onto her waist, and couldn't help but shiver, she scolded "pervert" in her heart, but didn't yield. She continued to sob, and yelled "Don't abandon me and the child....."

The passersby were all rowdy in discussion, they were outraged by the injustice received by the "pregnant teenager" TangTang.

"How can youngsters be like this these days....."

"I think this girl is really pitiful, she's so young, how is she going to live in the future?"

"Lad, you must take responsibility for your actions, toying with a girl like that will incur the wrath of heaven!"

"Girl, don't be scared, I'll bring you to the hospital, the surgery takes 10 minutes....."

.....

Yang Chen couldn't be bothered, with a devilish smile he held TangTang in his embrace with one hand, pressing her onto himself so that she can't break away, while his other hand suddenly moved towards TangTang's chest!

The teenage girl's puberty was already in the budding stage. He covered its entirety with a hand; it was just enough to cover a whole palm, the flexibility and softness of it made Yang Chen knead it in relish.

"Yiing!"

TangTang cried out, as if she received an electric shock, she didn't expect that in front of such a big crowd in public, this man remained unfazed, and even had the mood to take advantage of her. She couldn't help but blush as if her face was burning.

TangTang began to struggle, trying to get away from Yang Chen's embrace, but how could she have enough strength to break free? She could only feel Yang Chen's hand on her chest unceasingly toying with it. A certain private part of

hers already had a little reaction, her cherry lips slightly opened as she tenderly panted, her bones felt as soft as water.

Yang Chen was overjoyed, he didn't expect her to be so sensitive, so much so that she could barely endure this amount of stimulation.

The surrounding passersby were all speechless, previously this pair of man and woman were still in a scene of a "wretched drama" yet all of a sudden, the girl was in the man's arms blushing without any movement, allowing the man to touch wherever!?

TangTang noticed the various kinds of strange expressions on everybody's faces, she felt like an exhibitionist in the middle of the streets, as if everything was seen. She nearly cried from panic.

"You..... Let me go....." TangTang spoke with an imploring tone.

Yang Chen lowered his head, and blew a breath of hot air into TangTang's crystal-like ear, "You're already a woman who bears my child, so what if the child's father touches a little?"

"I..... I no longer dare, I'm wrong..... Yang Chen please let me go..... Uncle..... I beg you....." Previously, TangTang pretended to cry, but this time she was truly washing her face with tears. She initially wanted to teach him a lesson, yet the result was that she was hugged, had her breasts attacked, and lost all of her face!

Yang Chen coldly laughed, "Since you're young and lacking discipline, I'll discipline you in place of your parents."

With that said, Yang Chen released TangTang, but made a loud smack onto the girl's butt.

Smack!

The loud sound made TangTang who was blushing in shame want to burrow her face into the ground, there were tears in her eyes while she bit her lips, despite how aggrieved she appeared, she didn't dare to fight back, for fear that this uncle might molest her again.

TangTang hurriedly took a few steps back, and tearfully looked at Yang Chen

before hatefully saying, “Yang Chen, today’s score, I will definitely settle it!”

“As you please.” Yang Chen was annoyed by this senseless teenage girl, he stuck a hand into his pocket, planning to pull out a cigarette to smoke, then return home.

But right at this moment, in the middle of the road, a black Chevrolet car suddenly deviated away from the lane it was on, and entered the other lane, driving in the wrong direction.

At this moment there were no cars in the reverse direction, and the black Chevrolet car fiercely increased its speed, its engine roared, heading straight towards the position TangTang stood!

The black car was like an artillery shell that was fired on the streets, in a blink of an eye it was about to knock into the teenage girl who was still wiping away her tears on the roadside!

Several passersby who were about to leave noticed this scene, and loudly alarmed.

“Young lady be careful!!”

TangTang bewilderedly took a look behind her, the black car that had appeared behind her in a flash was like a pouncing lion, frightening her with its brandished claws and bared fangs!

TangTang didn’t have the time to make the appropriate reaction and get away before she saw the black car about to crash into her. In that instant, TangTang clearly felt that she was going to be mysteriously run over to death like this!

But at the same time, TangTang suddenly felt a strong force hugging onto her waist, then she felt her body involuntarily lift off the ground, and her vision spin!

In the eyes of those in the surroundings, a different scene appeared, all they saw was Yang Chen abruptly taking action from where he stood, like a white afterimage, nobody was able to clearly see the trajectory of his movements before he had already moved TangTang away to the sidewalk!

The black Chevrolet continued charging forward, then quickly forced its way back into the lane it was originally on, as if it was just swerving in and out of its

lane just to overtake!

TangTang's heart was still hanging from her throat, after she came to the realization that she was safe, she blankly looked at Yang Chen, "I..... I thought I was about to die."

"I'd advise you not to get on the streets in the future, otherwise you wouldn't even know you were run over to death by a car." Yang Chen nonchalantly stuck a cigarette into his mouth, and ignited his lighter.

The surrounding people were already clapping, they admired Yang Chen's valiant actions. They were very curious as to how Yang Chen moved so quickly though.

TangTang calmed her nerves, then patted her chest with a little lingering fear left, "How frightening, if it wasn't for you, I'd be dead. Say it, how do you want me to repay you?"

"As long as you don't create trouble for me I'd thank the heavens." Yang Chen was done speaking, shook his head and prepared to leave.

TangTang didn't allow this, she went up to pull Yang Chen back, "That won't do, you must give me your phone number at the very least, I'll treat you to a meal some time, if you don't give it to me..... I..... I'll keep following you like this!"

Yang Chen was helpless, and could only give TangTang his phone number. TangTang even called it once to make sure it was correct before brightly smiling.

"Alright, I've got cram class and I'm about to be late, goodbye for now, I'll treat you to a meal when I'm free." TangTang waved goodbye, it seemed like her mood wasn't completely ruined by what was nearly an accident.

However, after TangTang took a few steps, a silver Toyota van stopped by the side of the road, and several robust men wearing black suits hastily walked over.

"Miss, are you alright!?"

A man who wasn't tall, wore sunglasses, headphones and microphone with a neat appearance, seemed to be their leader. The moment he got off the van he caringly asked TangTang, and examined TangTang from top to bottom, fearing

that she had received any harm.

TangTang impatiently pouted, “Big bro Little Yong, how many times have I told you, I’m just going to cram class, there’s no need for so many people to follow me.”

“Miss, these days Zhong Hai isn’t safe, Master is merely worried about your safety, which is why he called us to protect you. You must understand your father’s painstaking effort, and stop playing schemes to shake us off, if by any chance we aren’t by your side and something happens to you, how are we going to answer to Master!?” The man who was addressed as Big bro Little Yong advised.

Watching this scene, Yang Chen was rather surprised. In present day, in a large city like Zhong Hai the number of rich people aren’t few, while there are even more people who drive expensive cars, but to be able to hire so many bodyguards to protect a little girl, there aren’t that many who could do so. At the very least, somebody like that must at least have a certain social status, otherwise who would go through the trouble to persecute his family?

“Fine fine.” TangTang interrupted Little Yong, “I know you guys are doing your duty, but I just don’t like so many people following me. Since you guys are so adamant, you can do as you please.”

TangTang turned back and waved at Yang Chen, revealing a smile like the sun, “Uncle, you’re not allowed to disappear, you must pick up the phone when I call you, okay?”

Yang Chen blew a ring of smoke, and nodded.

Big bro Little Yong and the other bodyguards vigilantly glanced at Yang Chen, “Miss, this person is?”

Chapter 77 : Abnormality of the PR Department

“This is my benefactor, I was nearly knocked down by a car earlier and this uncle pulled me back.” TangTang spoke honestly.

“What!?”

Seeing that the bodyguards revealed such serious expressions, TangTang didn't conceal anything and narrated what had happened. When she mentioned the scene where there was danger, several of the bodyguards broke out in cold sweat. If she was really knocked to death by the car, there would be no need for them to continue in this profession, even trying to scrape a living would be difficult!

Little Yong looked at Yang Chen strangely, walked up to him and said, “Thank you for saving my family's Miss, Mr. Yang, is it possible for us to invite you to follow us back, so that our Master could express his gratitude?”

The meaning behind those words was without a doubt suspicion towards Yang Chen's motives; perhaps he was in cahoots with those malefactors and was putting on a show to gain their trust.

How could Yang Chen not understand this? Without even mentioning how he didn't have the time to waste on them, even if he did have the time, he wouldn't be so bored so as to go explain anything to them. While waving his hand he said, “I know what you guys are thinking, this matter is unrelated to me, whoever your family's Master offended, go find that person instead, all I did was save this girl's life while passing by, don't put the blame on me.”

Little Yong's brows wrinkled, “Mr. Yang, if you have a clear conscience, then you shouldn't fear meeting my family's Master.”

Yang Chen laughed and said, “This has nothing to do with fear, on what basis do I have to meet your family's Master just because he said so? Why don't you call him to come meet me, and I'll speak to him.”

“Mr. Yang, if you aren’t willing to cooperate, don’t blame me for being impolite!” Little Yong saw that Yang Chen wasn’t willing to leave with them, and felt his suspicions grow towards this man.

When the other bodyguards saw that their leader intended to use force, they immediately surrounded Yang Chen, not permitting him to leave, they all wore fiendish expressions filled with hostility.

At this moment, TangTang who was standing by the side couldn’t watch anymore, “Big bro Little Yong, what kind of attitude is this! Why are you making things difficult for Yang Chen when he saved me, if he really wanted to harm me, shouldn’t he just let the car run me over!?”

“A little girl is more intelligent than all of you.” Yang Chen sighed and said.

Little Yong wore a respectful face and said, “Miss might not know this, but many people utilize such methods to get close to the target in exchange for an even bigger benefit. Miss shouldn’t make things awkward for us.”

Yang Chen laughed out loud, “You’ve watched too many movies like ‘*Internal Affairs*’ and ‘*Born to Be King*’ haven’t you? I don’t have the time to care about a pack of retards like you, get out of the way before you regret it.”

“That would have to depend on Mr. Yang’s abilities.” Little Yong said, then commanded everybody, “Tie him up and bring him back!”

“You’re all courting death.....”

Yang Chen was truly angered. Originally, seeing that they were on a main street, he didn’t want to show off in front of so many passersby, but this pack of fools were obviously moths heading into the fire.

Without waiting for the bodyguards to approach, Yang Chen tossed the cigarette butt away, his incredible arm strength made the cigarette butt seem like a small bullet, fiercely smashing into the forehead of the bodyguard right in front!

Just being attacked by the cigarette butt made the bodyguard see stars, and clumsily fall onto the ground.

Yang Chen’s hands didn’t stay idle, as he drew circles to stretch them. So that

his movements wouldn't seem too shocking, he used some karate movements that seemed easy to perform, while the might of his attacks remained as astonishing as before. When his hands came into contact with the bodyguards' punches and kicks, the bodyguards either had their bones break or their flesh bruised to the point of being unable to get up.

If it wasn't for the last half a year of restraining his true nature, Yang Chen suspected that he would have already killed them all.

The shock Little Yong felt in his heart was difficult to express. Naturally, he knew how strong his subordinates were, it was easy for them to fight one on one against black belt karate experts. How can this man's simple-looking karate moves embody such a terrifying strength!?

"Sure enough, you aren't an ordinary person....." Little Yong broke out in cold sweat, and pulled the stunned TangTang behind him.

Yang Chen stared at Little Yong as if he was staring at a moron, he coldly laughed and said, "That's right, I'm not an ordinary person, I want to harm your family's Miss. What about it? Can you beat me? You can't even protect yourself, yet you want to protect your family's Miss, can you stop joking?"

"Even in death I wouldn't let you harm my family's Miss!" Little Yong tightened all the muscles in his body, and said to TangTang behind him, "Miss, quickly run, this person is extremely dangerous!"

TangTang anxiously replied, "Big bro Little Yong stop fighting! You guys can't beat him, and Yang Chen won't hurt me!"

It was the first time Yang Chen felt the urge to kill someone just because a person didn't know how to use his brain. Rolling his eyes, he made an angry smile, "Although I know that when we call others idiots, we have to think about whether or not we ourselves are the idiots, I have to admit that some people like you are asking for a scolding, for you are a goddamn idiot!"

Yang Chen pointed his middle finger at the nervous Little Yong, then shook his head, and turned to leave. The rest of the passersby pointed their fingers to blame, yet nobody blocked Yang Chen's path.

Seeing that Yang Chen didn't intend to make a move, Little Yong breathed a

breath of relief, and hurriedly supported TangTang towards the Toyota van, saying, “Miss quickly get in, it would be terrible if that man comes back! We must leave this place at once!”

TangTang looked speechlessly at Little Yong who perspired profusely. She facepalmed, lamented and said, “Big Bro Little Yong, has there truly been nobody who told you how silly you are in the past?”

Being asked such a question out of the blue, Little Yong nodded, and replied, “There hasn’t, is something the matter Miss?”

“There is now! Idiot!!!” TangTang shouted, and she left to do her own business without turning back.

With only Little Yong alone, he helplessly watched her leave; he looked at his brothers on the ground, then looked again at TangTang walking off into the distance. He was at a loss as to what to do next.

As Monday rolled around, Yang Chen once again carried the hot and steaming breakfasts into the office. After buying breakfasts so many times, he had accumulated practical experience; such as which stall gives more meat, which stall’s noodle were good, and even which stall added more water into their soymilk.

These small details might be negligible things to ordinary people, but Yang Chen who enjoyed a simple life had a great time doing such things. Despite being different, this brought the same satisfaction as selling mutton skewers, after all practice makes perfect.

Of course, if such thoughts were spoken aloud, it would definitely invite disdain from others once again.

Zhang Cai, who arrived a little late, seemed to be in a good mood. She had a slightly heat curled hairdo, with a round and beautiful face; she wore a blue dress with shoulder straps, white net stockings, along with her small sexy waist and plump butt swaying with her body. At the place where the short skirt clung to her frame, a vague view of her rear cleavage could be seen.

After giving Yang Chen a sweet smile, she picked up a bag of soup dumplings. With some hesitation, Zhang Cai picked up 2 youtiaos, and said, “Thanks for

bringing such a sumptuous breakfast everyday, I've already gained 2 kilograms from eating it."

Yang Chen bit a shaobing and suggested, "The new item, dried preserved vegetable shaobing, tastes pretty good, I bought some today, you can try one."

[TL: Dried preserved vegetable shaobing is the author's handle]

"It's better if it is left for you to eat, I don't like to eat shaobing."

On the side, Zhao Hongyan teased, "Zhang Cai, if you keep increasing the amount you eat for breakfast, your husband might not want you anymore."

"Hmph, if my husband doesn't want me anymore. I can find another, how could this young woman be worried about no men wanting her?" Zhang Cai proudly joked, looked at Yang Chen, and gleamingly said, "Isn't that right, Big Brother Yang?"

Hearing the words "Big Brother Yang" from Zhang Cai nearly made Yang Chen choke on his food, he hurried to nod, "Right right, if he doesn't want his wife, I'd want her."

"Lecher." Zhao Hongyan jokingly scolded.

Right at this moment, a short and skinny figure suddenly walked to Yang Chen's side, and courteously asked, "Yang Chen, I need to bother you for a moment."

The one who walked over was the one who rarely spoke in the office, Chen Bo. This man who grew in a way that could match a lady could be considered to be someone out of the ordinary in Public Relations department.

"What's the matter?" Yang Chen smiled and asked.

Chen Bo's face suddenly blushed a little, like he was very shy, and he stammered, "There's something I need to trouble you with."

"What is it?" Yang Chen didn't know whether to laugh or to cry.

Chen Bo mustered his courage and said, "I heard that you have a car, I want you to help me pick up my sister from the train station. I'm not familiar with the roads in Zhong Hai, and it's also my sister's first time coming to Zhong Hai, I'm afraid of being scammed if we take a taxi, moreover it's too expensive, so I'd like

to ask if you have the time.” At the end of his words, his voice was so low that it was almost impossible to hear.

“For such a small matter do you need to make it seem so difficult to say?” Yang Chen smiled and said, “Say it, which day? I’m free everyday.”

Chen Bo revealed a grateful smile, “Right, on this Wednesday, the train arrives in the afternoon, sorry to trouble you!”

“When the time comes just call out to me then.” Yang Chen agreed.

When the other PR ladies who sat a little closer saw this scene, they revealed astonishment, because it was too rare to see Chen Bo take the initiative to ask somebody for help.

After Chen Bo returned to his seat, Yang Chen continued playing some games, however it was no longer the Pokemon flash game, it was instead a jumping game like Super Mario Bros, controlling a small person in various settings to eat fruits.

This scene was seen by several female colleagues, and they were once more speechless towards Yang Chen.

Not long after, Mo Qianni, who wore a black suit, white dress shirt, and carried a light brown Chanel bag gracefully walked over. She picked up a bag of soy milk and vegetable buns from Yang Chen’s table, said “thank you” and returned back to her office.

“Yang Chen, have you noticed that our department head’s complexion doesn’t seem to be good? She seems pretty haggard, did she just experience a break up?” Zhao Hongyan suddenly leaned over and said.

Yang Chen seemed to have something in mind as he gazed at her office, and made a relaxed smile saying, “How would I know? However, her attitude is much better than before, at least she knows to say thanks when she takes her breakfast.” He continued to play as he spoke, ignoring Zhao Hongyan who was gossiping beside him.

After playing for the whole morning, he followed the 3 ladies into the canteen for lunch. The fellow male comrades in Yu Lei International were pretty harmonious, after all there were beauties everywhere, so things like vying over a

beauty doesn't happen. Yang Chen had already gradually entered the social circles in this company, and was able to greet and be greeted by quite a number of people.

After lunch, Yang Chen took an afternoon nap, then once again went back to game for a while, then it was time to get off work.

Following the passing of summer, the temperatures began to drop. It was evening time, and the sun hung on the horizon, its golden lights scattered all over Zhong Hai, causing the whole city to look like a sea of red.

The city's concrete jungle seemed like a maple forest in autumn, appearing dazzling to the eye.

While driving the BMW that he was getting more and more familiar with onto the highway, Yang Chen listened to the traffic news on the radio, and wondered if Wang Ma had prepared anything delicious in the villa at Dragon Garden.

But not long after, Yang Chen felt that there was something amiss, this was a sense fostered from many years of special experiences. When Yang Chen glanced at the car in his rear-view mirror, he immediately sneered.

Chapter 78-1: First time in life

When the car reached an exit in the highway, it swerved into a small lane that went in a different direction, towards the east of Zhong Hai, a new industrial area.

After he arrived at a section of the industrial area that was abandoned in the middle of construction, Yang Chen slowed down the car, and parked it on the soil ground by the side of the road. He took out a cigarette and quietly lit it up while leaning against the car, looking towards the oncoming car.

Not too far away, a black Honda Accord silently stopped, and a short while later, 4 men in boorish clothing got off. The 4 men were of different physiques, looks and temperament, but all of them looked maliciously at Yang Chen; there was even some ruthlessness in their eyes.

“How did you discover us?” A tan-skinned man wearing a floral shirt asked.

“A man’s sixth sense.” Yang Chen grinned.

The floral shirt man wrinkled his eyebrows, and bewilderedly questioned, “Since you noticed that you were being followed, why did you bring us here? Did you think that we would stop following you if you changed routes?”

Yang Chen breathed in a few breaths of smoke. He had some money, but the tobacco he smoked was still cheap and spicy. After blowing a few smoke rings in relish, Yang Chen grinned and said, “I didn’t ask for you guys to follow me, all I did was choose a venue that was suitable for you guys to disembark.”

“What do you mean?” The floral shirt man had difficulty understanding the current situation. All they did was follow instructions to investigate this man’s social status and background, and then figure out the next course of action. However, this scenario presented to him left him with no choice but to reconsider what their next step should be.

Yang Chen’s eyes formed two lines as he squinted, and with a weird smile he said, “Fellow brothers, haven’t you realised that in this area... there aren’t any

security cameras.....?”

As this was an area that was still opening up for development, the industrial area they were in had its work progress halted, causing its infrastructure to seem exceedingly chaotic and dilapidated. Even the road wasn't completely laid out, and there was simply no other cars to be seen.

“Cameras?” The floral shirt man maliciously smiled, “I should be the one warning you, in a place without cameras, we don't need to hold back when taking action.”

“What if it's the exact opposite?” Yang Chen shrugged his shoulders.

“Big bro, this brat wants to fight. It seems like he's really stupid.” One subordinate laughed while stating.

The floral shirt man's face showed that he was displeased as he said, “Youngster, you can talk big, but don't force us brothers to take you down. Although we haven't received the order to get rid of you, we can still act first and report later.”

“You guys are really annoying.” Yang Chen beamed as he said, “If you want to make your move, hurry up. I'm in a rush to go home for dinner.”

“Stinking brat, you're tired of living!”

A man with a groomed beard walked over without saying another word, and the other three no longer said anything either. They charged forward to encircle Yang Chen.

“Let me tell you this, bullshitting won't work, the one with the mightier fist is reason!” The bearded man spat out a mouthful of saliva, formed a fist, and threw it at Yang Chen's face like a pouncing tiger!

Yang Chen easily dodged the fist, and at the same time that he dodged, his lips formed a chilly smile, “When I returned to this country I inwardly resolved myself. If others do not provoke me, do not threaten me, or take the initiative to attack me, then I won't take the initiative to beat them up. So now I'm very thankful to that punch of yours, for it allows me to have no qualms about slaughtering you guys.”

“Everyone attack together!” The floral shirt man was in an unprecedented fury; he truly couldn’t tolerate a youngster like this who held the four of them in such contempt.

But the four’s coordinated attack seemed futile. Yang Chen casually executed some mixed martial arts moves; utilizing lightning speed and tyrannical strength. He caused the four men to have either broken fingers and arms or have their palms ruthlessly hit to form large bruises.

In a flash, the chaotic fight between the five turned into a scene of Yang Chen toying with them.

“He’s too tough, we can’t beat him!” The bearded man who made the first move shouted while covering his swollen face.

The floral shirt man also noticed how abnormal the situation was. Although he felt unresigned in his heart, he still recognized the fact that the four of them simply weren’t on the same level of strength as the man in front of their eyes.

“Run to the car!”

Under the floral shirt man’s order, the four of them hurriedly ran to the Honda Accord.

Yang Chen didn’t obstruct them, and with a smile that wasn’t a smile he watched the four lock the car and raise the windows as soon as they got in. They started up the car, and urgently turned the car around in an attempt to escape.

When the Honda Accord was about to get away, Yang Chen stooped down and picked up a pebble that was the size of an egg, weighing it in his hand.....

In the car, the floral shirt man and his subordinates breathed a sigh of relief after the car started. Although they couldn’t beat him down, they were at least able to get away. Furthermore, no matter how well this youngster could fight, he couldn’t possibly catch up to a car! When they reported this to the higher ups and returned with a huge entourage of their brothers, wouldn’t they be able to take revenge for this defeat!?

However, there’s always a difference between dreams and reality.....

After Yang Chen picked up the stone, he immediately got into a pitching stance

and closed one eye to take aim. He stretched his arm and leaned back, then his waist abruptly shot forward!

His right hand flung the stone that he was holding!

The stone was like a miniature artillery shell, tearing through the air with a sonic boom!

Bam!!!

With a speed that was impossible to see with the human eye, the stone smashed its way into the petrol tank from the side.....

Rumble!!!.....

The black Honda Accord that was still moving caught fire in a moment like an ignited dynamite; the raging flames soared towards the sky enveloping the entire car in high temperatures. The flames sent it charging towards a lamp post on the side of the road!

In a blink of an eye, the Honda Accord that was perfectly fine a moment ago turned into a flaming piece of coal.

Yang Chen looked at the 'death case of four men' he caused like he was looking at a piece of art. The reason he waited for the four to get in the car before disposing of their lives in this manner was mainly because he was afraid that the police might discover some clues.

In addition, killing these people, right when they had relaxed the most gave Yang Chen utmost satisfaction in his heart; this could also be considered a mental disease that he had developed over the years. It was a pity that Yang Chen never thought of treating this cruel shortcoming of his.

"When you leave the womb in your next life, remember to buy a German car, Japanese cars are too fragile." Yang Chen made a deep smile, returned to his car, and continued on his way back home.

Along the way, Yang Chen pondered over who would take action against him. First, this person was definitely not very familiar with him, otherwise they wouldn't have dispatched people to follow him, to investigate where he lived and his interpersonal relationships.

After thinking for a while, Yang Chen was still unable to figure out who it was, and could only sigh. With an expressionless face, he thought out loud, “It’s okay to find trouble with me, but if they implicate the people by my side..... They must die.....”

§

Chapter 78-2: First time in life

After having a sumptuous meal in the villa that evening, Wang Ma once again brought a bag of fashion magazines. She smiled to Yang Chen and said, “Young Master, these are magazines that Miss has subscribed to. They arrived today so please bring these to Miss in my stead later.”

Yang Chen was in the midst of watching news on the television. When he heard this, he happily received the bag. “This is how it should be, Wang Ma only needs to provide us with delicious meals; miscellaneous tasks like this should be dealt with by us men.”

“No no.” Wang Ma immediately replied: “Young Master cannot say this. My main goal is for Young Master to see Miss more often. This way Miss will think about how good Young Master is, and in the future the two of you can be more intimate.”

Yang Chen forced a smile and said, “Wang Ma, for you to tenaciously push Ruoxi into my embrace like this, do you trust me that much?”

Wang Ma unflinchingly replied, “Young Master, I’ve watched Miss grow up. In this lifetime I’ve never been able to bear and raise my own children. I feel embarrassed to say this, but Miss is like half a daughter to me. After Old Mistress and Mistress passed away, I’ve always hoped for Miss to have a proper home. Miss has always been this pretty since childhood, and the men who are smitten with her are all over Zhong Hai, but those people are too hypocritical.”

As she said that, Wang Ma looked at Yang Chen with a pleased smile, “Young Master isn’t like them. I may be old, but my judgement remains as clear as ever. Young Master, although you have never said it out loud, I know that you truly care for Miss. On the day Miss fainted, I could see it from your eyes that you care about Miss a lot. But like Miss, you’re just not used to expressing yourself. Sometimes, you youngsters worry about your own dignity a little too much, but the importance of dignity can’t compare with affection.”

Yang Chen remained silent for some time before he spoke with a dull smile,

“Wang Ma, you can become an expert in psychology. Your words made me doubt whether I am really who I am.”

“Don’t overthink things, Young Master. Just think of it as this old woman speaking drivel. It’s better for you to hurry on and send the magazines to Miss, if we dally any longer, Miss might go to sleep.”

Yang Chen picked up the bag of magazines and glanced through them — they were mostly fashion and internationally renowned brands’ introduction of their seasonal luxury goods. It can be inferred that as a fashion company’s CEO, Lin Ruoxi herself must personally understand these products.

Very soon, he left Dragon Garden and headed towards the hospital. As he drove along a street bustling with various businesses, Yang Chen glanced at a shop with its lights turned on from the corner of his eyes, and couldn’t help but reveal a knowing smile.

When he arrived at this hospital, it was nearly 10 in the evening. A majority of the wards already had their lights switched off, but Lin Ruoxi’s ward remained brightly lit.

Yang Chen dexterously opened the door. While looking inside, he realised that Lin Ruoxi wasn’t alone in the ward.

The visitor was Lin Ruoxi’s secretary, who was also known as the one with a airport runway (flat-chested) figure, Wu Yue. It was unknown whether this person was originally ice-cold, or if she had learned from Lin Ruoxi on how to be exceedingly cold to the point of being boring.

Lin Ruoxi was lying on the bed. On the table in front of her, there was a pile of documents. She held a silver fountain pen in her hand and was in the midst of writing something down, while Wu Yue stood beside her, wearing an earnest expression. From time to time she tidied the papers and handed over more documents.

After seeing Yang Chen enter, Wu Yue wrinkled her brows, “What did you come here for?”

Yang Chen lifted up the bag of magazines in his hand, “I’m here to deliver these magazines.”

“Why are you the one to deliver them? Who do you think you are to the CEO?” Wu Yue discontentedly reprimanded.

Yang Chen thought for a moment. *In any case, she’s considered Lin Ruoxi’s trusted aide. It wouldn’t be a big deal to reveal it to her.* But before Yang Chen managed to say anything, Lin Ruoxi indifferently interrupted with a sentence.

“He’s my distant relative.” With that said, Lin Ruoxi faintly hinted him with her eyes, signaling Yang Chen not to say anything superfluous.

A legal husband turned into an insignificant ‘distant relative’. Yang Chen rubbed his nose, and his lips revealed a slightly pained smile. He initially thought that the two’s relationship had become rather intimate these days, but it seemed that currently, in Lin Ruoxi’s eyes, he was still merely a contracted acting companion. She did not truly accept him as someone close to her, and never had the thought of recognizing him as her husband.

He was slightly disappointed, but luckily he had a strong mentality and was prepared for such an outcome. He wasn’t so naive as to believe that the ice lady would be this easy to conquer. Yang Chen casually smiled, and didn’t say anything more. He placed the paper bag on Lin Ruoxi’s bedside cabinet and said, “Wang Ma asked me to deliver these; she said that these are your subscribed magazines for this month.”

Wu Yue showed an expression of sudden understanding. She made the assumption that this man who is famous in the company for being an odd jobs person had depended on the title of ‘distant relative’ to enter the company. She looked at Yang Chen with even more disdain than before, and spoke with a little hostility, “If there’s nothing else then drop the things and leave. Don’t disturb the CEO as she works.”

Yang Chen initially wanted to persuade Lin Ruoxi not to wear herself out at night, but after seeing her focus all her attention on the documents without any intention of talking to him, he didn’t court a rebuff.

“Then I shall leave now.” Although he was rather dissatisfied with Wu Yue, when all was said and done, she was still Lin Ruoxi’s secretary. It wasn’t a good idea to flare-up, so Yang Chen held in his anger and ignored her.

Only when Yang Chen turned to leave did Lin Ruoxi slightly raise her head. Her

clear eyes gazed at Yang Chen's back. His usually unruly and carefree back looked a little depressed and lonely under the lights. Lin Ruoxi couldn't help feeling regretful inside, she had not even said a word of thanks to him, but her shy temperament had left her simply unaware of how to speak up.

As the door closed, Lin Ruoxi released an unperceivable sigh and continued to deal with the documents.

Approximately an hour later, it was very late at night. Wu Yue took a look at her watch, and hesitantly said, "Boss, let's stop here for today, I'll bring the documents back, tidy them up and pass them to Department Head Mo tomorrow. The important ones have already been dealt with, you should rest now."

Lin Ruoxi rubbed her temples. These days she'd been taking Chinese medicine, recuperating, and also had to receive those people who came to visit. It was late at night, and fact was she was honestly rather tired, so she nodded and said, "Tell Department Head Mo that I'll personally handle the autumn fashion conference documents and the project for breaking into the Japanese market, while she deals with everything else."

"Understood, Boss."

Wu Yue worked extremely fast, in less than 5 minutes, all of the documents were tidied up. She respectfully bid Lin Ruoxi goodbye and left.

Lin Ruoxi relaxed her whole body, inhaled deeply, and leaned against the soft pillow. Her eyes glanced at the big bag of magazines Yang Chen had brought. With some thought, she brought the bag over, intending to take a look at the magazines before sleeping.

The moment she opened the bag, she suddenly smelled a familiar scent of glutinous rice pouring out of the bag. Lin Ruoxi was stunned and took a careful look inside. She discovered that other than the magazines which numbered more than a dozen, there were actually glutinous rice balls packed in a transparent plastic container!

Slowly taking the container out, Lin Ruoxi looked at the 10 round balls of doughy things inside. There were white ones, black ones, green ones, and various other colors. It was also still warm with a little steam at the top.

Lin Ruoxi naturally knew that these weren't given to her by Wang Ma, because when she was young, she had hurt her stomach from eating too many glutinous rice balls. From then on, Wang Ma never allowed her to eat glutinous rice balls again. Therefore, these could only be bought for her by that person.....

Is it because the last time Cai Yan visited, she mentioned that I love eating glutinous rice balls?

Just from that casual conversation, he remembered my favorite food?

Recalling the words she had said to Yang Chen earlier, and how coldly she had treated him as if he was a total stranger, along with the view of Yang Chen's back when he left.....

Lin Ruoxi was completely unaware that her eyes had begun to turn moist.

For the first time in her life, while looking at her favorite glutinous rice balls, Lin Ruoxi didn't have any appetite.

Chapter 79: Receiving Guests

After leaving the hospital, Yang Chen still felt stuffy so he drove his car at high speeds on the highway for a while before feeling more at ease.

It was already between around 11 or 12 at night. Most of Zhong Hai's suburbs' various kinds of lights were already lit up. If it was a month ago, perhaps Yang Chen would be interested in those hair salons with pink lights, but he wanted to indulge himself this night, and going to ROSE bar to look for Rose was obviously more worthy for him.

[TL: I think the hair salon with pink lights should mean special services.]

Occasionally, he thought about how unfathomable his actions were. There was Rose who wholeheartedly treated him well, who always cared for and cherished him. There was also Li Jingjing, that little girl, who could make him happy for a whole day just from seeing her once. There were women like that who he usually didn't take good care of. Instead, he took care of the ice lady Lin Ruoxi, and even thought about making a trip to a snack store to buy glutinous rice balls for her in the middle of the night.

Perhaps it was because she was too similar to that woman deep in his memories..... Or perhaps, things that are beyond one's reach are the best. This sentence truly suits all of mankind.

Since he harbored such guilt towards Rose, Yang Chen decided not to look for her. He drove the car to a supper place in the west region and got off. He intended to find a stall where he could drink beer and have a bowl of noodles.

When midnight came, other than on the highways of Zhong Hai City, unlicensed peddlers began selling supper everywhere else. If they were lucky, they would peacefully conduct their business, but if they weren't lucky, they might have their stalls torn apart by the city's management and police.

Yang Chen casually chose a small noodle store that was relatively cleaner, and called out to the stall owner who was cooking noodles, "Boss, a bowl of shredded meat noodles and two bottles of beer."

The owner was a middle aged man. After he heard this he earnestly smiled and replied, “Oh, I’ll bring it to you shortly.”

When Yang Chen heard these words, he suddenly felt that this voice was rather familiar. When he gazed over and took a careful look, he could not help but smile, “Why is it you!?”

The noodle stall owner bewilderedly raised his head and carefully looked. When he finally recognized Yang Chen, he nearly fell onto the ground from fright. His face turned incredibly bitter, “So…… So it’s you huh. Haha…… haha…… what a coincidence.”

The noodle stall owner was actually the person who had brought Yang Chen into the police station in the beginning, Feng Biao, Team Leader Feng.

Originally wearing a police uniform, living arrogantly with a bossy demeanor, he was a police officer of the West Region Police Station. Yet today, he was wearing filthy clothes, donning an apron and cooking noodles at the side of the road as a licenseless hawker.

Yang Chen pondered for a moment, and asked with uncertainty, “Did you change professions, or were you fired?”

Feng Biao’s face flushed as he embarrassedly replied, “I was…… I was fired.”

“It’s karmic retribution.” Yang Chen smiled while shaking his head, “However, don’t you worry, I never brooded over what happened that time. You should continue cooking; don’t let the noodles turn soggy.”

Feng Biao, who had thought that Yang Chen would hit him while he was down, instantly turned happy. He was very clear of the fact that if things went awry, he wouldn’t be a match for Yang Chen. His stall didn’t have a license either, so he would definitely lose. This was what he was worried about. Since the opposite party didn’t mind what had happened previously at all, how could Feng Biao not be overjoyed?

“Thank you! Thank you pal!” Feng Biao was nearly touched to the point of tears, “I have no choice either, I know that I made many mistakes in the past. Thank you for not brooding over my past mistakes pal.”

Yang Chen didn’t mind at all and said, “Go and continue cooking your

noodles.”

“Alright alright, this meal is on the house for you pal, I won’t accept any money.” Feng Biao continued working as if he just received amnesty.

Yang Chen was a little conflicted, this old dude can be considered to be rather pitiful. When Cai Yan previously said that Feng Biao would be severely punished, he had thought that was all talk; he never imagined that that girl would really fire Feng Biao. This wasn’t something that could be done just by holding a superior post; it can be assumed that Cai Yan had an unordinary background. Otherwise, she wouldn’t be able to keep her word and have Feng Biao punished to the point of falling this low.

He thought of the words Cai Yan spoke in Lin Ruoxi’s ward, and what she had said regarding Lin Ruoxi’s grandpa. Yang Chen couldn’t help but feel puzzled. Since the two of them were childhood friends, could this mean that his wife’s family had relations with the government? Why would Lin Ruoxi hate her grandpa so much?

While thinking of such things that could never come to a conclusion, Feng Biao had already prepared the noodles. He carried it along with two bottles of Tsingtao Beer and smiled as he walked over, “Pal, please enjoy. If there’s anything else you want, please let me know.”

Seeing how accustomed to working in a noodle stall Feng Biao was, Yang Chen no longer felt that this person was a disappointment. At the very least, he understood the situation he was in, and could give and take. Anyhow, he wouldn’t live too terribly.

After slurping a few mouthfuls of noodles and gulping several mouthfuls of beer, Yang Chen felt carefree and relaxed. But suddenly, there was noise coming from an alley close by.

“Brat don’t you run!!”

“Stop!”

“If you run some more we’ll beat you to death!!”

“Stop!!”

Several loudly yelling men abruptly scuttled out from the alley. They chased after a relatively scrawny figure while shouting angrily.

Yang Chen had sharp eyes and was able to recognize who it was in an instant. He couldn't help but suspect that he was hallucinating, because the figure being pursued wore a white short sleeved shirt, had white skin, and was a man. It was none other than the other man in the office, Chen Bo!

Chen Bo looked extremely exhausted. His face was full of fear as he fled towards the noodle stall with at least 7 or 8 men following behind him in hot pursuit. In addition, it was obvious that they were running slightly faster than him, and he was about to be caught.

Yang Chen may not understand what was going on, but he was definitely going to help Chen Bo. Therefore, he picked up a wooden bench beside him, and casually threw it with force!

The wooden bench spun and abruptly smashed onto the thighs of the two men who were in front. After those two men miserably shrieked and fell, the startled flock of people stopped to look at Yang Chen.

Quite a number of customers of the noodle stall witnessed this scene and felt that things were going to turn awry, so they quickly dodged to the side and didn't dare to approach.

When Chen Bo suddenly noticed Yang Chen, his face was filled with surprise. As he was afraid, he didn't give a damn about why he was there and ran behind Yang Chen while gasping for breath. He shuddered, unwilling to face the group of men.

"Chen Bo, where were you going?" Yang Chen turned his head and asked with a smile.

Chen Bo's face was completely red, and it was unknown whether it was because he felt shy or because he was tired from running. He explained, "They..... They want to catch me, I..... I don't want to go with them....."

"Catch you? Why would they want to catch you?"

Without waiting for Yang Chen to receive an answer, the group of men had already flown into a rage and showered curses on him.

“You must have eaten the heart of a bear to have such nerve! Do you know who we are!?”

“He’s my colleague, so I must protect him even before I know for what reason you guys want him.” Replied Yang Chen.

After hearing these words, Chen Bo’s eyes turned red, evidently touched.

“Brat, since you’re courting death, we’ll give it to you!”

Several hoodlums who were on the brink of losing control charged forward, but how could their random punches and kicks amount to anything in Yang Chen’s eyes?

With just lightly flinging a few palms, and throwing some kicks onto the hoodlums’ stomachs, the ones who fiercely charged over tasted retribution and fell down onto the ground.

Chen Bo blankly watched how Yang Chen easily solved such a big problem, and could only gaze upon Yang Chen with reverence.

“You have guts, brat! Wait for our boss to come and he’ll put you in order!” A hoodlum who wore a silver chain hooted.

Without waiting for him to finish speaking, another hoodlum shouted, “The boss is here! The boss is here!!”

Looking towards the direction these people chased from, there was indeed a bunch of people walking over. While the man who led the way wore a white shirt, with both hands in his pockets, and a face of arrogance. This was the person they called their boss.

The hoodlums quickly got up, and beamed with joy as they went up to their boss to make a complaint, hoping that their boss would deal with Yang Chen. But before they walked over, that ‘boss’ had already taken the initiative to meet him.

“Mr Yang! It’s been a long long time! We meet again!”

“Good evening Boss Guo, I never expected to see you again in a place like this.” Yang Chen nearly laughed. So the boss they mentioned was the one who had previously ‘given money’ to him, Guo Ziheng. Guo Ziheng was also the boss of that gangster company.

That day he couldn't scare Yang Chen even with a rifle, and had been completely defeated.

"Fate brings people together even if they're a thousand miles apart; it seems like there's fate between you and me, Mr Yang." As if he had already forgotten their feud, Guo Ziheng refreshingly took the initiative to shake hands with Yang Chen.

Yang Chen magnanimously shook hands with him as well, as if they were truly good friends who haven't met for a long time. Little did the others know that in these two people's hearts, things were totally different.

"Since there's an old friend like Boss Guo here, I believe there's no need to speak further." Yang Chen indifferently replied.

The few hoodlums who were still incredibly arrogant a moment ago were stunned. *Why does the boss wear such a warm expression when talking to this man?* This caused them to have no other choice but to remain silent.

Guo Ziheng's face turned stiff. With a forced smile he said, "Mr Yang may not know of this. Actually I'm just entrusted with a task by someone else, and under orders to drag this person behind you back. Otherwise, this Guo would have difficulty reporting back."

This was somewhat unexpected to Yang Chen. Guo Ziheng was aware of his strength, and should understand that he would definitely lose if they fight, but he was still persistent in bringing away Chen Bo. Just who was Chen Bo?

"Boss Guo, could it be that this friend of mine did something that is taboo in the underworld? Or does he owe you money?" Puzzled, Yang Chen asked.

Guo Ziheng smiled guiltily. With a sigh, he said, "Why don't Mr Yang ask your friend what the matter is?"

Yang Chen nodded, and looked towards Chen Bo.

Chen Bo's legs were shivering, and sweat soaked his back. Seeing Yang Chen's enquiring glance, he opened his mouth, "I..... I..... I..... They want me to receive a guest....."

"Receive a guest?" Yang Chen creased his eyebrows.

Chen Bo's face turned as red as an apple. He looked down and said in a nearly inaudible voice, "They want me to serve a man."

Yang Chen was startled for a moment before he understood what Chen Bo meant. To be honest, he felt weird inside. He never expected the usually 'feminine' Chen Bo to truly be taken a fancy to by a man.

But it wasn't right to laugh. Luckily, he had seen a number of such things while overseas, so Yang Chen didn't find this too hard to accept. Turning back to look at Guo Ziheng, he said, "This isn't a good idea, right? This friend of mine doesn't want to do it so you guys shouldn't force him."

Guo Ziheng bitterly smiled, "Mr Yang, with you around, I don't dare to force him. But..... I can't afford to offend that person either....."

Chapter 80: Talk about that in the next life

Yang Chen came to an understanding, for someone to be able to send Guo Ziheng to chase after someone, that person must have a considerable status. At the very least, it's someone who the small gangster boss Guo Ziheng doesn't dare offend. However, Guo Ziheng was no match for Yang Chen, and still had difficulty erasing the fear he has for Yang Chen. Thus, he was trying to push the blame onto Yang Chen.

"Fine fine, don't show me such a sly expression." Yang Chen didn't seem to care at all as he smiled and said, "You may just report my name to him, if there's a problem he can confront me, I'll be at Yu Lei International's PR Department awaiting him."

"Mr. Yang is truly a straightforward person!" Guo Ziheng laughed out loud, and ordered his flock of subordinates, "Let's leave!"

But how could Yang Chen allow him to leave as he pleases? He waved his hand, "Wait! I'm not done speaking!"

Guo Ziheng's steps came to a stop, he had a premonition that something bad was about to happen, and stiffly enquired, "Does Mr. Yang have more instructions?"

Yang Chen chuckled, "Boss Guo, for me to shoulder this matter, there must be some fees don't you think.....?" As he said that, he rubbed his hands.

As expected! Extortion! Vampire! Gangster!!

Guo Ziheng's heart was filled with curses, but he maintained an incredibly willing expression on his face. He had a subordinate bring him his chequebook, scribbled on it, and presented it to Yang Chen. With a flattering smile he said, "Mr. Yang is right, this Guo has truly been inconsiderate."

The pack of subordinates couldn't believe their eyes, what happened to their boss? Giving money to this guy and being so polite!?

Yang Chen was pleased, he nodded and flicked the cheque in his hands. This

Guo Ziheng was still considered rather well off, to casually give away 20 thousand Huaxia dollars, therefore Yang Chen said, "You guys may leave, as for everything else, lay it all on me."

How could Guo Ziheng dare stay for a moment longer? If he stayed for a moment longer he might lose another tens of thousands, so he brought his bunch of subordinates away, as if he was evading a ghost.

Watching that bunch of people leave imposingly, Yang Chen turned away with a smile, and said to Chen Bo who was still stunned, "Don't you have something that you want to explain to me?"

Chen Bo swallowed his saliva, and vaguely said, "Thank..... Thank you, Yang Chen....."

"Is that all?" Asked Yang Chen with a smile that wasn't a smile.

Chen Bo's hands clasped onto the edge of his shirt, but remained silent with a flushed face.

Yang Chen didn't force the issue, and minded his own business walking to the noodle stall and picking up a few bottles of beer, saying to Feng Biao who hid in a corner, "Boss Feng, I'm taking a few bottles of beer, is that okay?"

"Of course, of course!" Feng Biao rained curses in his heart, what he saw was simply a devil on earth, he had already fallen so low yet he still brought more disaster to him. If those hoodlums truly came in for a fight, wouldn't they end up tearing apart his little stall!?

Yang Chen threw Chen Bo a look, "Come with me."

Together, they strolled to the riverbank. Along the way they both remained silent, feeling the cool breeze, seeming tranquil yet awkward.

They walked to the slope, and Yang Chen sat on the grass, while Chen Bo hesitated for a moment before sitting beside him as well.

"Do you drink?" Yang Chen picked up a bottle of beer, pinched and slightly twisted the cap with his fingers making the lid fall off.

Chen Bo swallowed his saliva, nodded, and received the bottle of beer. He took a few big gulps of it, and immediately choked and coughed a few times. He had

tears flowing out, but immediately continued to drink the beer in gulps, as if he had a feud with the beer.

Without interrupting him, Yang Chen picked up another bottle and drank a few mouthfuls.

Chen Bo's capacity for alcohol was obviously crap, because after a few mouthfuls his face was totally flushed and his eyes were a little dazed.

The night breeze blew across the river plain, allowing one's mind be clearer. Chen Bo who had drunk just about enough had calmed his breathing. He suddenly put down his empty beer bottle and turned to look straight at Yang Chen. On his face that was overly delicate and pretty, a never before seen seriousness was revealed.

"Yang Chen, do you despise me?" Chen Bo asked.

"If I look down upon you, I won't shoulder this burden to save you." Yang Chen shot a glance at him.

Chen Bo's lips faintly shuddered, and said, "I'm not that kind of person, I was forced, I don't like men....."

"Well, to be honest, you know that I came back from overseas, homosexuality isn't a big deal in my eyes, so you do not need to explain such things to me, for whether or not you say this will not make any difference to me. I just want to know how all of this began." Yang Chen replied.

Chen Bo nodded, as if he had been prepared mentally, and slowly explained, "Since you've helped me so much, I should tell you everything, even if it makes you despise me after hearing it....."

"When I was a child, my family was very poor, but I always excelled in my studies. Although I always got bullied due to my weak physique, I still managed to receive a recommendation and enter Peking University. Because I look like a girl, I was a joke for others to gossip about in the school. In my 3rd year, a senior from the basketball team invited me for a meal. His family was very rich, and I didn't dare decline. When I went to have that meal with him, he drugged me..... and did..... and did those things to me....."

[TL: I previously tled his school as North University and that was wrong, I just

didn't notice that it was an abbreviation for Peking University orz]

When Chen Bo spoke up to this point, his eyes displayed pain, hatred and unwillingness, "Only then did I find out that he liked men. But he didn't allow me to speak of this to others, and I didn't dare report this to the police, because I was alone in the capital without any relatives, there was basically no one that would help me. Furthermore, at that time I was worried that others would look down on me, worried that they would alienate me and thus, I endured. After that day, that senior repeatedly called me out to do that thing..... but he gave me some money, which allowed me to have an easier time in the capital. Sometimes I also sent the some of the money I received to my family as well. During that period, I thought, it didn't matter if I was wronged like this. Receiving so much money was better than receiving nothing in return for getting screwed over."

"..... But afterwards, that senior began to call other men over as well, that was when I found out that they had an organization just for such a thing. Those people were very rich, and I had no way to defy them, which was why after I graduated from college, I stayed away from conversing with others, because I was afraid that I would reveal some clues of this in conversations and cause others to look down upon me....."

Yang Chen sighed endlessly in his heart, so Chen Bo had such a terrible experience in his past, although this wasn't too miserable in his opinion, but when it happened to an ordinary college student in the country, it must have been excruciatingly difficult to accept. This wasn't just selling his dignity as a man, it was also him selling his soul.

Chen Bo continued to speak, "Afterwards, I graduated and many companies invited me, but I still decided to come to Zhong Hai, that way I could break free from those men in the capital who tormented me. Fortunately, I succeeded. They probably were sick of playing with me, so I managed to work peacefully in Yu Lei International up till now, and nobody from the past came looking for me..... but..... but something happened recently, and I needed a lot of money....."

"What happened?" Bewildered, Yang Chen asked.

“When my dad was younger, he took up labor intensive work that caused long-term detriments, we recently discovered that he was having a kidney failure and needed a new kidney, but even though we are more well off than before, it still wasn’t enough..... as a result, I.....”

“So you thought of making money through other ways?” Yang Chen pondered for a moment, then asked, “Several days ago I saw someone who looked like you at Heavenly Province, was that you?”

Chen Bo gave a start, “You were at Heavenly Province? You..... the one you saw was indeed me, I’m working part-time there.”

“So that’s why you have been so sleepy in the mornings, you haven’t been sleeping at night.” Yang Chen now understood.

“In Heavenly Province..... there..... there are those services.....” It seemed like Chen Bo had accepted this fact, and said in a more relaxed manner, “There are many male customers that like men, I occasionally received a significant amount of tips there..... although it was difficult to bear, at least that money could help support the family. Besides, I’ve already done those things before, this was just shattering glass that had already been broken, at the very least, it could support the monetary needs for my father to receive treatment.”

“Then what’s the matter today?” Yang Chen asked.

Chen Bo bit his lip, and spoke with suffering, “It’s a pervert; that man is simply a lunatic. I’ve seen him toying with other men in Heavenly Province..... The way he plays could torment them to death, I managed to see it happen by coincidence, and was afraid that it would someday be my turn, so I kept avoiding him. But today that man wanted me, the gangster boss that wanted to catch me earlier also accompanies him in playing, and wanted to capture me and gift me to him. I do not intend to work at Heavenly Province anymore, I will resign tomorrow and find somewhere else to work at.”

“Do you know what’s his name?” Yang Chen had a rough understanding of what happened, it could be assumed that the pervert Chen Bo spoke of was a terrifyingly perverted homosexual.

Chen Bo shook his head, “All I know is his surname, Sir Zhou. They called him Gongzi and I don’t know anything else, but he seemed to have a lot of power as

that gangster boss named Guo kept boot-licking him.

Yang Chen seemed to have thought of something and nodded, gently smiled and patted Chen Bo on the shoulder, “You need not worry, if you need money for your father’s illness, you can borrow from me and slowly return it. Although I don’t contribute much as a person, I can at the very least help my friends. Besides, money can be earned after it’s spent, but if a person is gone, then everything is lost.”

“Thank you.....” Chen Bo couldn’t hold back the tears, he wiped them off, and said with a smile, “I know you are a good person, but I don’t want to borrow money from you. My sister and I have already gathered enough money, and borrowed quite a lot of it from our relatives and friends. The reason my sister is coming to Zhong Hai on Wednesday is to work hard here with me and return back what we owe.”

“Your sister is coming to Zhong Hai to work? Doesn’t she need to study?” Yang Chen originally thought that Chen Bo’s sister was just here to visit Chen Bo.

Chen Bo bitterly shook his head, “My sister is very sensible and stopped schooling half way, but her university kept her in their records, so she could return to school for her studies anytime within the next two years.”

“Every family has its share of problems, since you said you don’t need to borrow money, I won’t force you, but if you have any needs or things you need help with, you can let me know, I’m very free, and you know that too.” Yang Chen winked.

When Chen Bo released the load on his mind, and saw that Yang Chen did not despise him, he was in a much better mood. He couldn’t help but blush as he said, “Yang Chen, if I was a woman, I would definitely marry you, you’re a true man.”

Seeing the pretty boy Chen Bo’s peach red face bashfully speak these words, Yang Chen quivered, hastily waved his hands and spoke with a forced smile, “About that..... Talk about that in the next life..... Haha.....”

Chapter 81: You're not even fart

The next day, when Yang Chen was carrying bags of breakfast into the office, the ladies in the office chattered a lot more than usual.

They were dressed gracefully and prettily, and the fragrant smell of so many office ladies squeezed together assailed the nose. They crowded around the office's bulletin board(?) to look at a new announcement while happily discussing something.

This time, Yang Chen did not receive any greetings for bringing in breakfast, which made him a little depressed. He curiously walked over to take a look. It was unexpectedly an announcement regarding team vacation.

The excellent welfare provided by Yu Lei International is known by many. Every year, the company would organize a vacation for its employees. There are two reasons why this is held. First, to help everybody relax. Second, to make the team more harmonious.

Zhang Cai noticed Yang Chen walking over, and with a face full of excitement, she patted on Yang Chen's chest, "Yang Chen look, there are many venues to choose for our vacation, I don't even know which to choose now!"

Yang Chen took a careful look at the choices on the bulletin board, it was indeed plentiful. There weren't only domestic places that were slightly far from where they were like Yunnan, Northwest China and Pearl River Delta; there were also places overseas such as Singapore, Malaysia, Thailand, Japan and South Korea. But of course, going to different places required a different amount of funds, and so the employees are also going to split into groups. Their finances would also be adjusted accordingly, and for those that have surplus funds left over, it would be presented to them as their bonus.

"What have you guys chosen?" Yang Chen asked.

"Japan of course! It'd be winter, the perfect time to go to Hokkaido to enjoy the snow, it'd be very romantic." A young lady full of youthful love responded.

“I want to go to South Korea! Perhaps, I might even bump into some handsome celebrities.”

“I think you’re going there for plastic surgery! Haha.....”

“You’re asking to die.....”

The bunch of chirpy ladies laughed and made a ruckus.

Liu Mingyu smiled and asked with interest, “Where do you want to go Yang Chen? You can’t refuse to go, this is a team activity, not taking part will result in disdain from everybody.”

“This.....” Yang Chen truly hadn’t planned on going. After all, he had only returned to this country a little more than half a year ago, and he honestly didn’t have the mood to travel overseas again. But once he heard that this would cause anger to the beauties, he awkwardly smiled and said, “I’d just go wherever all of you are going. To be honest I think going to scenic spots in the country would be enough, there’s no real need to go so far away, how can other countries’ sceneries compare to our country Huaxia?”

“Hmph.” Zhao Hongyan creased her nose, “Of course you would say that, you came back from abroad. We rarely go abroad, and have rarely taken a plane.”

“That’s right that’s right. When the time comes, you follow us and help us carry our bags while you’re at it.” Zhang Cai happily clapped, and happily walked to get breakfast.

Just as everybody was busily discussing, at the door to the office, Mo Qianni entered. She wore a light gray suit for women, paired with the white stockings below her skirt that showed the contours of her exquisite legs, she looked seductive with her well-developed chest and butt. She carried a white ladies’ briefcase in her hand, wore silver round-framed glasses, and stood there with a cold expression on her beautiful face. She exuded the aura of a successful career woman.

In a split second, the office turned silent, and the ladies timidly ran back to their seats, quietly looking at their superior. They didn’t dare make a sound.

Mo Qianni walked in, with her high-heeled shoes making *tap tap* sounds, and she slowly said, “The vacation is in winter, and whether or not it would be given

will depend on your performances, don't blame me for not reminding all of you.....”

Only when Mo Qianni entered her office did the ladies there begin to whisper to each other.

“Our Department Head seems to be in a bad mood these days.”

“Perhaps she is too stressed from work, she may have become the Deputy CEO, but it doesn't seem like an easy job.”

“Could it that menopause came early?”

“Shh..... Be careful she might hear!”

Yang Chen was a little surprised, it seemed like Mo Qianni had visited Lin Ruoxi less for the last few days, and she didn't even take breakfast from his table today, it looked like she had a lot on her mind.

.....

In the evening, when it was time to get off work, Yang Chen was hesitating over whether he should pay a visit to Old Li's family or not. He hadn't contacted them for a while, and also missed the girl Li Jingjing. He also wondered whether she received harrassments from Jiang Shuo, but before Yang Chen made the call, Wang Ma called.

“Young Master, there's a guest looking for you.” Wang Ma spoke through the phone.

“Guest? Who is it?” Yang Chen did not remember anybody who knows where he lives.

Wang Ma thought for a moment, “I don't know either, but they don't seem to be villains, they all look pretty upright, but they speak pretty rudely.”

“All? You mean there are a lot of them?” Yang Chen became more baffled.

“Young Master it's better for you to hurry on back to take a look first.” Wang Ma evidently didn't know what was going on.

After Yang Chen drove home, the moment he got off the car, he noticed two Passats parked in front of the villa, but what was worth noting was the license

plates, it was actually 0007 and 0008 in red font that was extremely conspicuous. Although Yang Chen wasn't very familiar with the government's departments in the country, he still knew that cars like these were definitely related to the government.

Without waiting for Yang Chen to enter the villa, several men in black suits walked out from the villa. They each wore grave expressions, emitted an air of arrogance, and had bulging chests that made them look very strong.

"You must be Mr. Yang." A tall man immediately asked, "Please come with us."

These words were spoken with a tone of superiority, so Yang Chen naturally didn't treat them politely. *Ordering me? As early as ten years ago, there was no longer a person in the world who would do that.*

"Who are you people, and where am I supposed to follow you to? I'm not a 3 year old kid, you guys can't be abducting and selling me, right?" Yang Chen showed a gentle smile.

The tall man grimly replied, "You don't need to ask these questions, all you need to do is act according to what we tell you to do, you do not have the authority to ask questions."

"Since when did Huaxia turn into a feudal society, a slave-owning society? We have to make sure the rights to personal freedom is clear, you guys came out of the blue and refuse to answer while asking me to follow you, how is this any different from a kidnapping?"

The tall man sneered, "Yang Chen, I'm asking you one more time, are you coming or not, all this gibberish you're spouting has no effect on us!"

At this time, Wang Ma walked out of the house, looked at this scene, and yelled, "How can you people be like this! My family's Young Master isn't a criminal! On what basis does he have to follow you just because you said so!?"

It must be known that in Wang Ma's heart, Yang Chen was now the master of this family. He was the backbone for Lin Ruoxi and herself. Even though Lin Ruoxi didn't think that way, Wang Ma had long looked upon Yang Chen as family, for this bunch of people to suddenly take away Yang Chen with such terrible manners, Wang Ma obviously wouldn't allow it.

The tall man looked a little fed up, and with a wave of his hand, a man who wore a suit behind him locked Wang Ma's arms and dragged her back into the house, disregarding Wang Ma's shouts and attempts to resist.

Yang Chen immediately narrowed his eyes when he saw this scene. He no longer cared about where this group of people came from, and whether it would alarm the secret force in Huaxia. This matter might bring about a lot of trouble, but as of this moment, he knew that all of that can't compare to the pain of watching Wang Ma, a powerless woman, get bullied by them.

"You people need not return today." Yang Chen stuffed the BMW car key into his pocket, and coldly said.

The tall man was very clear as to what Yang Chen meant, and couldn't help but laugh wildly, "Yang Chen, for us to say 'please' is us thinking highly of you. For that person to want to meet you is the fortune you built up over your previous lifetimes. To be honest, what we prefer to do is directly treat you as a suspect of a criminal organization and arrest you, that would simplify matters. But that person is magnanimous, and wants to meet you first. Don't choose to not recognize kindness, and think that you're extraordinary just because you know a little kung fu. In our eyes, you're not even fart!"

"You're full of rubbish." Yang Chen impatiently walked towards the tall man.

A violent look flashed in the tall man's eyes, and he shouted, "Capture him!"

Several tall and sturdy men wearing suits promptly charged towards Yang Chen, their arms were like iron pincers as they attempted to grab hold of Yang Chen's arms.

Yang Chen naturally wouldn't let things go as they wished. Before their arms came into contact with his, he shaped his hands like hooks, and seemed to lightly grab hold of two men's wrists!

"Ow!"

The two robust men simply weren't able to react, all they felt was pain equivalent to having the bones at their wrist broken.

But without waiting for the robust men to make their next move, Yang Chen spread his arms, hooked onto the two men's necks and fiercely pulled them

towards each other!

Bang!

The two men's heads collided with each other, and they directly fainted onto the ground!

"You people should all come together, I'm too lazy to catch you one by one." Yang Chen continued to walk towards the tall man, and on his face, in the midst of that cold expression was an indescribable madness.

These people truly infuriated him, they were making his blood boil, which was something that hasn't happened for a long time.

The tall man was finally aware that this problem wasn't simple, his expression turned solemn and serious, all the muscles on his body tensed up, and at the same time he signalled to the six other people with his eyes. Together, they surrounded Yang Chen.

These people obviously practiced encircling tactics, moreover, they were trained in martial arts by the special forces for the military, so their movements were agile while their strength was brutal. In addition, when they entered a battle stance, they became extremely focused and resolute.

People often say that numbers are strength, and the fire burns high when everybody adds wood to it, but in the face of absolute power, everything appears pale and powerless!

Without waiting for these people to complete their encirclement and rain down their attacks, Yang Chen directly stretched his hand towards the tall man's neck!

"You're too simple-minded!" The tall man felt that Yang Chen was looking down upon him, which was why Yang Chen made such a direct attack. So he angrily turned his body, and shot a spin kick at Yang Chen's arm!

Yang Chen sneered, as if he didn't see this happening, and his hand didn't deviate from its path at all. At the same time as when he was about to grab hold of the tall man, his arm was squarely struck by the leather shoe, but it didn't sway the slightest. Just like before, it went towards the tall man's neck without a change!

A burst of fear entered the tall man's heart, he was clear as to how much strength was contained in the kick he threw, even if it was a marble block, it would have been broken by his kick!

This man! Is he made of steel!?

Yang Chen didn't give him any time to think, he moved forward like lightning, and directly grabbed hold of the tall man's neck, clutching it with force, he endured the urge to break the man's neck, and casually raised the man up from the ground! He lifted him up with a relaxed expression, like he was lifting a little bird.

The other subordinates, that wanted to surround and attack saw this happen, turned speechless from the shock. They originally thought that this fella who didn't know what's good for him would have his arm broken from the kick, but who would've known that the their leader's spin kick wouldn't have the slightest effect!

The tall man was lifted up from where he was, seemingly light and powerless like a rag doll. He unceasingly brandished his arms and legs, and tried to kick Yang Chen, but Yang Chen just tightened his grip a little, and the man had difficulty breathing. His face was pale and cold sweat flowed, he simply had no strength to resist!

"That phrase you used earlier, I'll return to you. In my eyes, you're not even fart....."

Chapter 82: Train Station

Yang Chen unenthusiastically said these words, and casually tossed the man towards the Volkswagen Passat that was parked along the road!

The strong metal construction of the German car was an extremely unpleasant spot for the tall man to land on. When he rammed against it, it felt like he was struck by a humongous hammer, and caused him to spit a mouth of fresh blood due to the jolt!

“Team Leader!”

The other men in suits were surprised to see the tall man defeated so easily. The person who did this was completely unscathed and it made them feel indescribably terrified. They hurriedly went up to check on the tall man’s injuries, and entered a dilemma deciding if they should advance or retreat as they stared at Yang Chen.

The tall man took a few deep breaths, in his eyes there was fear and nonacceptance as he looked at Yang Chen who stood at a distance. He wiped off the blood on the side of his mouth, and shuddered, “Leave..... Let’s go!”

As if they were released from a heavy burden, the subordinates hurriedly opened their car doors and got in. They started the car and left the villa as if they were running for their life.

Yang Chen didn’t get in his car to chase them, after all a frightened Wang Ma was still in the house. Moreover, these men definitely had unordinary backgrounds, unless there was no alternative, Yang Chen did not want utterly provoke the power behind them. With his experience of years in trials and hardships, Yang Chen deeply understood that despite how he could do things that were impossible in the eyes of others, it might end up adversely affecting the people close to him. Yang Chen didn’t want to have a situation like that occur, so he learned ‘forbearance.’

But of course, a man has a limit to his patience.

When he entered the villa, Wang Ma was sitting on the floor wiping her tears. After Wang Ma saw Yang Chen enter, she stood up and grabbed hold of Yang Chen's hand, "Young Master, are you alright!?"

Watching Wang Ma's tears of urgent concern, Yang Chen felt warmth in his heart, "Of course, I'm fine, but I apologize that you got frightened, Wang Ma."

"Young Master, don't say such a thing, it was clearly those people that had attitude problems. Why can't they just talk things out? They acted as if they were a god from the heavens, just watching them made me angry."

"Don't worry, if they come again, don't make a move and just give me a call. They won't dare to do a thing." Yang Chen spoke with assurance.

Wang Ma smiled as she sighed, "It's alright if I suffer a little mistreatment, but I'm worried about you, Young Master. Young Master, could it be that you've accidentally provoked some important person? They looked like they belonged to a part of the government, when my family's Old Mistress was still here she said, 'Civilians do not fight with officials.' How can ordinary people compete with officials? Young master, if there really is trouble, you should let Miss know, Miss is acquainted with several elders who are in the government, perhaps that would help."

Yang Chen shook his head, "I didn't provoke anybody, and I don't know what they came here for. Don't mention this matter to Ruoxi, it's better if I settle this myself."

Wang Ma knew that Yang Chen wasn't willing to speak anymore on this topic, so she proceeded to the kitchen to prepare dinner just as always.

Yang Chen took a few steps in the living room in contemplation, then made a phone call.....

The phone was quickly picked up on the other side, and the familiar rough voice of Zhang Hu was heard, "Mr. Yang, you seldom make a call to me, haha."

Yang Chen wasn't in a mood to make jokes, so he directly requested, "Zhang Hu, this time I have something I need your help with, I need some of your brothers who are quick-witted and good with their hands to secretly help me protect a place and a person."

On the other side of the line, Zhang Hu paused for a while before speaking hesitantly, “Mr. Yang, Miss Rose wants to have a word with you.....”

“Rose? She’s beside you?” Yang Chen was stunned, then made a bitter laugh, the reason he looked for Zhang Hu was because he was intentionally avoiding Rose on this matter, but he didn’t expect to jump into the line of fire!

Rose’s voice was still as indolent and enchanting as ever. Although Yang Chen could not see her, he could imagine that the expression on Rose’s face at this moment was the smile of a lady who grasped onto her lover’s weakness.

“Hubby, if you need people why didn’t you ask me directly, and instead ask Zhang Hu?”

Rose’s words were straight to the point, causing Yang Chen to feel speechless, but he guiltily replied, “This is because I’m worried that you’re busy, my darling Rose. I heard that you’ve often been playing with West Union Society these days, and didn’t want to trouble you with my trivial matters.”

“Don’t say such a thing, as long as it’s my hubby’s matters, I will make some time no matter how busy I am. Say it, what do you need men for?” Rose smartly asked.

Yang Chen knew that this woman had a nimble mind, and he wouldn’t be able to conceal this from her, so he could only speak honestly, “Recently, there has been trouble looking for me. Today, they directly came to the place I’m living at. I’m wondering if you could arrange a few more intelligent ones to protect the surroundings of my house, and help to avoid the people staying there from receiving harm. But of course, the most important thing is to immediately contact me when anything happens.

“Oh? Is it the place where you are staying with your legal wife, hubby? You weren’t willing to let me know previously, where is that?”

In his mind, Yang Chen thought: *Can such a thing be casually said?* But there was no other way around this, he knew that she would find out sooner or later, so he said it in a relaxed manner.

When Rose heard it, she chuckled and said, “People who are able to stay at Dragon Garden are all rich and famous, hearing these words from you, I feel a

little pressure as a mistress.”

“Enough, don’t speak so sarcastically to me please. In the future, I will let the two of you meet if there’s a chance, but not now, I’m afraid of being cut with an electric saw in the middle of the night……” Yang Chen helplessly said.

“I’m not going to meet her, it’ll be too humiliating.” Rose flatly declined, “I’ll meet her when I want to, this is a matter between women, men aren’t allowed to interfere.”

Yang Chen anxiously asked, “Darling Rose, you wouldn’t employ the methods you use in the underworld, right?”

Rose broke into a totally unreserved loud laugh, it may be assumed that she was already trembling from the laughter on the other side, “Hubby, you’re really good at teasing, how would I dare? As a concubine, the most I can do is strive for a little space from the empress, I’d rather curry favor with her, you know? If I really dared to make a move on her, wouldn’t I be killed by you, hubby……”

Yang Chen awkwardly laughed and didn’t stay on that topic. After he discussed over arranging protection for Wang Ma, he agreed to see her in two days at ROSE bar, and ended the call.

As for the one in the hospital, Yang Chen wasn’t worried, without even mentioning whether or not these people knew the relationship between him and Lin Ruoxi, even if they knew, he reckoned that they wouldn’t dare to try. After all, Lin Ruoxi was a famous businesswoman, she also had contacts with people in the government, and wasn’t someone who could be easily taken down.

.....

The next day at noon time, in Zhong Hai’s west train station, a train’s horn resounded, and a old-fashioned train slowly entered the station.

On the railway platform, Yang Chen’s calm face was a stark contrast to Chen Bo’s face brimming with anticipation.

Yang Chen held a cigarette in his mouth, with his eyes droopy like he was dozing off. He sat on a wooden bench, and asked Chen Bo beside him, “The one you mentioned was this train, you didn’t make a mistake, right?”

“No mistakes, I definitely won’t make a mistake.” Chen Bo was very excited, “This is the first time my sister has travelled so far, my whole family is worried about her making this trip to Zhong Hai, how would I dare remember wrongly.”

“Does your sister study in a university in Sichuan?”

Chen Bo replied a little sadly, “Actually, my sister passed the exam to enter Beijing University as well, but she took taking care of our parents into consideration, so she stayed in Sichuan for her studies. However, she receives a full scholarship every year, her grades are excellent!”

“You siblings are both pretty good at studies.” Yang Chen smiled and said, “Unlike me, I’ve practically never studied.”

Chen Bo bewilderedly asked, “Yang Chen, aren’t you a graduate from Harvard University? Why do you say that you never studied?”

Embarrassed, Yang Chen smiled but didn’t explain. He can’t possibly say that the degree was stuffed into his hands by that female dean in an attempt to curry favor with him, right? If he really wanted a degree like that, he could fill up an entire car with them.

Soon after, the train’s doors opened. The hasty travelers began to take their bags and luggages off the train, and looked around before making their way to the train station’s exit.

Chen Bo stretched his neck to constantly look for his sister’s figure. He was incredibly anxious. Only when most of the people have more or less left, did he reveal a pleased smile, as if a heavy load was lifted off him he said, “At long last she’s here!”

“Big bro!” A clear voice with sincere joy resounded from one of the train carriages nearby.

Yang Chen stood up and turned to look. What he saw was a girl with a ponytail that was slightly messy, wearing a yellow blouse, loose brown linen trousers, running over while carrying an old suitcase.

Taking a closer look, he noticed that the girl was on the skinny side, extremely similar to Chen Bo. She had a delicate face and her skin was snow white like Chen Bo’s.

Due to the hot weather, the girl's face was covered with beads of sweat as she revealed an innocent smile. She had a untainted natural atmosphere that city girls did not possess, making her shine in one's eyes.

Chen Bo passionately hugged his sister, then asked about how her trip was, how things were in the family, and spoke for a full half an hour before chatting enough.

When he suddenly noticed that Yang Chen was still here, Chen Bo made an embarrassed smile as he said, "I'm sorry, I was too excited, I haven't seen my sister for over a year."

"You siblings are really alike, you can't possibly be twins, right?" Yang Chen felt that if Chen Bo was a girl, they would definitely be a pair of charming twin flowers.

Chen Bo dotingly rubbed his sister's pretty face, and spoke with a little pride, "Our relatives and friends say that as well, but I was indeed born several years earlier than her. However, we are even closer than twins."

"Bro, who is this big brother?" The girl timidly looked at Yang Chen and carefully asked.

Chen Bo immediately introduced him, "This is my friend and colleague, Yang Chen, Big brother Yang."

"Hello Big brother Yang, I'm Chen Rong." Chen Rong face was flushed, it was unknown whether it was due to physical activity or shyness.

"Don't be nervous, today, I'm just a chauffeur to pick you up. I'm your brother's friend and not his superior. You need not appear so respectful of me. I don't have a red packet to give you, and can't possibly give your brother a raise." Yang Chen joked.

Chen Rong chuckled, "I'm very grateful that Big brother Yang came to pick me."

Yang Chen's humorous attitude let the girl relax, the three chatted and joked about while they slowly made their way out of the station.

They only walked a short distance before Yang Chen suddenly noticed a

familiar figure standing on the railway platform far away. It was a woman who wore a blue dress standing alone on the platform, possessing a graceful figure, an outstanding woman. It was precisely his superior, Mo Qianni.

Mo Qianni did not notice Yang Chen at all, as if she was waiting for somebody with a heavy heart.

Presently, he had to send the Chen siblings, so Yang Chen did not intend to go up to greet her. After a glance, he decided not to think anymore about it.

In the car, Chen Rong looked as if she was shrinking as she looked at the interior of the car, she was a little curious, but didn't dare to casually touch anything inside.

But very soon, Chen Rong no longer had the energy to concern herself with these fresh things, sitting on the hard seat in the train is a very tiring matter, in addition, it was a long distance trip. Chen Rong felt like she was fighting a war with her eyelids, and fell asleep in the back seat after a few minutes.

Yang Chen saw this scene from the rearview mirror, and softly asked Chen Bo, "Your sister came to Zhong Hai to look for a job, what kind of job is she planning to do?"

Chen Bo tenderly looked at Chen Rong who was asleep behind, forced a smile and said, "We'll take our time to find one, I'm looking for a place to work part-time myself, nowadays jobs that could earn a decent amount yet don't require a degree are decreasing. I don't intend to let Little Rong go to the kind of place I went to, I want to find her a safer and cleaner place to work at."

Yang Chen thought for a moment, then said, "I have a place to recommend to your sister, the salary may not be high, but it's definitely safe, are you willing to consider it?"

Chapter 83: My first time

The place Yang Chen recommended to Chen Bo was the place Rose opened, ROSE bar. This bar was a mid-grade bar, and it wasn't that Rose didn't have ambitions, but this bar was left behind by her mother, so maintaining it had much more meaning to her than expanding the bar's business.

After dropping Chen Rong's luggage off at Chen Bo's small apartment, the three had a simple meal at a small restaurant and headed towards ROSE bar.

The bar was cold and deserted during the day, there was practically nobody around other than the servers, which made it suitable for Yang Chen to bring the brother and sister in.

When Chen Bo noticed that this was a bar, he asked in concern, "Yang Chen, this street is pretty rowdy at night, I don't feel that it's safe."

"I've thought about this problem before, I'm very familiar with the boss here, the boss here can definitely have someone escort Little Rong home at night."

Chen Bo did not probe any further, and entered the bar. When he entered the bar, he looked all around it, this bar's interior decoration had a elegant style, and he couldn't help but nod, this type of bar seemed to be the more formal type.

Little Zhao who was standing by the bar counter wore a server's attire saw Yang Chen enter and was immediately full of energy. He grinned and asked, "How did you have the time to come over during the day, Big bro Yang? And you even brought friends?"

Yang Chen greeted several of the servers in the bar, then said, "Is Rose here? I'm here to recommend personnel."

"The boss just woke up from her afternoon nap, I'll go call her now." Little Zhao diligently ran over after he said that.

Rose's dwelling wasn't a place that was open to the public, so Yang Chen chose to stay outside with the Chen siblings, waiting for Rose to come out.

Some time passed, and Rose who wore a moon-white cheongsam walked over

with light footsteps. That natural face without any makeup seemed incomparably charming under the dim lights. Under her mature aura, her elegant figure seemed all the more beautiful and seductive.

Chen Bo and Chen Rong were both a little dazed as they looked at Rose who walked over with a smile, they never would've thought that this bar's owner was such a young and beautiful woman.

"Yang Chen, you're here to recommend personnel to me?" With strangers around, Rose wittily addressed Yang Chen by his name, seeming composed and amiable.

Yang Chen hinted towards Chen Rong, "This is my friend's sister, she just came from Sichuan. They have some problems at home, so she dropped out of school to come to Zhong Hai, hoping to find a job to pay off their debts. I was thinking that this place of yours was pretty good, and with a caretaker there would be less things to worry about."

Rose quickly understood what Yang Chen meant, and began to carefully size Chen Rong up.

Chen Rong saw how Rose, who emitted a goddess-like aura smile at her, and couldn't help but blush and lower her head, she didn't dare to look straight into Rose's eyes.

"What's your name?" Rose bent her body forward a little, and warmly asked like a neighboring older sister asking her younger sister.

"Chen Rong, the Rong from Lian Rong(lotus seed paste)....." Chen Rong pursed her lips and answered.

Rose gently smiled and said, "Don't be nervous, just listen to me. Although Yang Chen recommended you, I can only let you start from the lowest level, like carrying dishes and sweeping the floor. Doing such work might get you tired and dirty, while customers might throw their temper and scold you, are you willing to do it?"

"I'm willing, I've always taken care of my parents at home and did such work before, I even did some part-time work at a fast-food restaurant before." Chen Rong hurriedly replied.

Rose wore a profound smile, and suddenly rubbed her hand on Chen Rong's cheek, "You shall work here from now on then. I will have Little Zhao and the others show you the ropes, just let me know if you have any troubles, you don't need to be shy, I will not let my employees get bullied."

"Yep!" Chen Rong held the tears back in her eyes and innocently smiled.

When Little Zhao brought Chen Rong away to sign the contract, go through the formalities and inform her of various things, Chen Bo who didn't dare utter a word in front of Rose suddenly said, "Thank you, I know Yang Chen is a good person, you are Yang Chen's friend, so I trust you. Please take care of my sister!" After he said that, he even bowed.

Rose didn't know whether to laugh or to cry as she supported him with a hand, and said, "Your sister is fresh and pure like the spring waters from a mountain, in present day society, this is too rare. To be honest, I've been lacking a good girl like this as an assistant. If your sister is willing to, I really do wish to keep her by my side in the future, and personally teach her some things. I'm just afraid that as her brother you would object."

While hearing these words, Yang Chen was startled. He looked at Rose with surprise, he didn't expect that Rose wanted to pick up a disciple. It's no wonder that she looked at Chen Rong with such a strange gaze. But once he thought about how the innocent Chen Rong might be taught by the big boss of the underworld, Yang Chen felt like laughing.

How could Chen Bo possibly know that Rose's identity was that of a queen in Zhong Hai's underworld? He thought that Rose was suggesting to teach Chen Rong how to do business, how could he decline? Therefore he hurriedly smiled and said, "As long as Little Rong is willing, as her brother I will support her decision, Boss Rose wouldn't cause harm to us, so I'm not worried."

"You trust Yang Chen and me so much?" Rose had a odd smile as she returned with another question.

Chen Bo nodded seriously, "I do, I'm poor and useless, yet Yang Chen took care of me and helped me, unlike the other people that look down on me. If I don't trust him, then I'm truly worse than pigs and dogs! Boss Rose is Yang Chen's friend, I believe in the ancient saying 'when conversing with great scholars, there

are never shallow people in a conversation'. Yang Chen is a great person, so Boss Rose is naturally worth trusting!"

Rose couldn't help but chuckle and say, "You're more interesting than Yang Chen, you can even speak in such a manner..... Since you've said that, I'll take it as your approval of me taking care of Chen Rong. In the future, you can't say that I'm doing things without permission, alright?"

Chen Bo blushed and laughed, "I won't I won't, I hope Boss Rose doesn't take offense to these words..... Other than my company's CEO, you're the prettiest woman I've ever met, how can a person like you do anything that lets little people like us down..... Haha....."

"Your company's CEO?" Rose's eyes shined, and she profoundly looked at Yang Chen, "That definitely has to be a person who is beautiful like a fairy?"

There were beads of cold sweat on Yang Chen's forehead, he didn't dare look straight at Rose.

How could Chen Bo know what was going on? With reverence he said, "Yes, I was shocked silly the first time I saw her, just like how I met you today, Boss Rose. However, our company's employees all respect her very much, many people think of her as their idol."

Rose nodded with a smile that wasn't a smile, she then chatted a little more with Chen Bo and said to Yang Chen, "Yang Chen, there's something I need to talk to you privately about, do you have time tonight?"

Yang Chen clearly saw the words 'if you don't come you're dead' on Rose's face, and with a rigid smile he said, "I have time, I'll definitely come, haha....."

After all of Chen Rong's work arrangements were handled, Yang Chen the Chen siblings who were in a good mood back to their apartment, Chen Bo had to clean up Chen Rong's room so he decided not to return to work.

Yang Chen had nothing else to do, while his appointment with Rose was at night, he was afraid of bumping into others if he visited Lin Ruoxi, and that girl Li Jingjing definitely had classes to teach at school. After some pondering, his best option seemed to be to return to the office and play games.

Just as he was about to leave for Yu Lei International, his phone rang. Seeing

who the person that called was first made Yang Chen confused, then made his eyebrows purse together as he remembered who it was——TangTang.

Once he picked up the call, TangTang promptly asked straightforwardly, “Uncle, where are you?”

“Is something the matter?” Yang Chen felt that it was better if he was clear of the situation, this girl was trouble.

TangTang directly replied, “Today I had exams, so school ended early this afternoon, I have nothing better to do, so I decided to treat you to a meal; you agreed to this before, you’re not allowed to decline.”

Yang Chen recalled that such a thing did happen, so he rubbed his stomach and replied, “I’m not hungry now, a little later maybe.”

“No can do! Uncle, as a man why are you so mean? Do I absolutely have to treat you to a meal for you to accompany me? I’m alone on the streets and very bored, please come and accompany me to play, we’ll go eat two hours later.” TangTang pleaded.

Yang Chen had trouble facing this girl’s tantrum, and hesitantly suggested, “You should go home, don’t your parents care about you at all?”

“Hmph, what about it? They don’t have the time to take care of a child like me who nobody loves, they’re extremely busy everyday.”

“What about your classmates?”

“They’re all retards, and way too childish..... Uncle come on.....” TangTang seemed to have grasped Yang Chen’s personality, he doesn’t succumb to force so she used begging.

Yang Chen felt a little depressed, she was such a pitiful child, she didn’t receive her parents’ love, isn’t that the same as him when he was little? Don’t judge her just by the fact that she could drive a Porsche, she truly seemed to be lonely in her teenage heart.

“Fine, where are you? I’ll go pick you.” Yang Chen had nothing better to do, so there was no harm in accompanying this young lady, meeting her wasn’t a good thing to him though.

“Between Central 3rd Street and 14th Street, at the crossroad, hurry here to pick me, I’m wearing a pink miniskirt!”

With a loud laugh, TangTang hung up the phone.

Yang Chen helplessly sighed, “This girl wouldn’t be worth watching in a movie even if she stripped naked.” As he thought out loud, the foot he had stepping on the accelerator with pressed down further.....

In less than a minute, Yang Chen noticed TangTang standing at the side of the road. She wore cute pink clothes, a cap, and a cute innocent smile. It was hard to imagine that that delinquent girl from that day could look so lovely.

Once TangTang got onto the car, Yang Chen couldn’t help but praise, “You look so good like this, much prettier than that appearance before where you didn’t look like a human or a ghost.”

TangTang discontentedly pouted, “That is the trend, but I don’t think you’ll understand anyways Uncle, at worst I could just play the role of a fresh and pure little girl every time I meet you.”

“There’s a generation gap between us.” Muttered Yang Chen before asking, “Where to?”

“Zhong Hai Cinema, let’s go watch a movie!” TangTang blurted.

“You’ve had this all planned?” Yang Chen felt like he fell into a trap, “You can’t possibly have some tricks planned for me, right?”

TangTang clenched her spotlessly white teeth, and angrily took out a pair of tickets, “Movie tickets issued by the school for a patriotism movie, I don’t think it should be wasted since there’s nothing better to do, so I decided to watch it; Uncle do you think that this is harmful to you?”

“This movie is good.” Yang Chen looked at the picture of the nation’s soldier printed on the movie ticket, and with a smile he said, “I like to watch movies that are about Huaxia’s history.”

“Why?” TangTang bewilderedly asked.

“Because I don’t know these stories.” Yang Chen said as a matter of course, “By knowing your own country’s history you would be able to love your country

more, your school's methods are correct."

TangTang pouted, "These are already old and stale. Moreover, everybody received two movie tickets, but in the whole class I'm the only one who is going without any friends, but instead with a wretched uncle."

"If worst comes to worst we could go our separate ways after we enter, you watch the movie yourself and I'll watch the movie myself." Yang Chen indifferently said as he drove.

"No!" TangTang's face suddenly flushed, and she shyly rubbed her hands. She displayed a charm that didn't match her age, and softly said, "This is my first time watching a movie alone with a man, how can we sit separately....."

Yang Chen's leg suddenly twitched, and he nearly floored the accelerator to bang the car in front!

§

Chapter 84: Hannya

Along the way to the cinema, TangTang grabbed hold of Yang Chen's arm like a cute and helpless bird the moment she got off the car. She stuck to him tightly, imitating the look of a happy young lady.

"What are you doing?"

"Pretending to be your girlfriend, entering as a couple like this is normal, otherwise it'd be so awkward." TangTang honestly replied.

Yang Chen rubbed her head, "Isn't it the same if you acted as my little sister? As a little girl what are you acting as a woman for?"

"How am I little?" TangTang swung her fists in rage, "Look at my boobs....."

As she said that, TangTang unexpectedly stretched her hand to her collar and wanted to pull open a gap with her hand.

"What are you doing?" Yang Chen quickly grabbed ahold of TangTang's hand and said, "There are so many people on the street, what are you pulling open your shirt's collar for?"

"To let you see this lady's 'cleavage'....." TangTang proudly said, "I may not have reached C yet, but it'll grow in the next two years to a minimum of a D. It's not fair that you compare me with those old ladies that have already given birth! If you want to compare, you should choose a highschool girl to compare me with. We'll see whose is bigger!"

Yang Chen's forehead was filled with black lines, the delinquent girl suddenly turned into a proud and dainty girl. This was a little difficult to bear, so he coughed a few times and said, "Don't look down on women who have given birth, they are making great contributions in creating the future generation of our human civilization."

"What are you acting holy for, isn't it because you men impregnate them?" TangTang pouted.

"Stop there!" Yang Chen felt that the situation was turning awry, "Let's go

watch the movie.....”

Without a way to turn this girl into his little sister, he dragged the stepchild-like TangTang into the cinema. When he entered, he cheered up a little when he saw some young ladies in the surroundings here to watch a movie with some fat middle-aged men. In comparison, TangTang and him looked rather normal.

TangTang still had a childish attitude as she bought a bucket of popcorn and a cup of cola and orange juice for her and Yang Chen before entering the theatre.

The scenes in the movie were a little long. The people’s army on the screen constantly rushed to bravely kill the enemy without any regards for their own life.

Yang Chen couldn’t help but ask, “Why is this movie only showing how they kill people without any history in the background?”

“What were you expecting? Patriotism movies are all like this, to let us know how difficult it was to form this country, and how many people died. If you want to know anything else, you have to read the history books.”

“But this is too fake isn’t it? The bullets sprayed it till it was like a bee’s nest, how can a person still stand and talk so much?” Yang Chen didn’t know whether to laugh or to cry.

TangTang looked at him as if she was looking at a moron, “Uncle, it can’t possibly be that you’ve never seen a movie like this before, right?”

“I just returned from overseas a little more than half a year ago, and truly haven’t seen anything like this.” Yang Chen honestly answered.

As if TangTang discovered a new world she said, “Really? Uncle, you’re educated overseas? I couldn’t tell at all, I thought you were a parvenu from a small mountain village!”

Yang Chen didn’t mind at all, “It’s all the same to me, I may not be a parvenu, but people who call others parvenu are usually those who are jealous of parvenu. How can someone be a parvenu without money, isn’t that right?”

“Hmph, what a flowery mouth, but you do make sense.”

When the movie ended, TangTang was asleep on Yang Chen’s shoulder. Yang

Chen helplessly pushed her. This made her wake up in a daze, and wipe away the saliva at the corner of her mouth as she innocently smiled.

This girl can actually be pretty cute sometimes. Yang Chen thought.

When they left the theatre, TangTang who drank too much of the beverage hastily went into the toilet, and dawdled for over ten minutes before running out with an embarrassed smile, while Yang Chen could only force a smile.

When the two walked out of the cinema complex, the bright neon lights on the streets were lit up, under the dazzling lights, pedestrians walked hurriedly, the curtains to a city's night life were about to open.

The air outside was a little cold, and the winds made TangTang shiver. She grabbed hold of Yang Chen's shirt, "Uncle, let's go, we'll have hot-pot, today's weather is pretty cold."

Yang Chen felt that autumn was approaching, and nodded in agreement.

Right at this time, two men in suits suddenly ran over from one side of the cinema complex, and bowed to TangTang in sync.

"Miss, we've finally found you, please return with us." One man respectfully said.

TangTang creased her brows, "Did my father send you guys?"

"That's right, Master is already waiting for you, please don't make things difficult for us."

TangTang looked at Yang Chen with an awkward expression, "Uncle....."

"It's alright, I'll send you back and have dinner at home." Said Yang Chen, he then turned to the two men and said, "Lead the way."

The two men looked at each other in the eye, and made a 'this way' hand gesture.

TangTang curiously looked at Yang Chen, then happily nodded.

One man stood at the front and the other at the back, TangTang hugged onto Yang Chen's arm, and followed into an alley behind the cinema complex. The gloomy and cold alley was very dark, and cold wind constantly blew into it.

TangTang was unable to stay calm as she said angrily, “How are you guys leading the way!? What are we going through an alley for?”

The man in front suddenly stopped walking, and turned around expressionlessly. His face seemed extremely pale in the dark alley. A pair of dull and dark eyes stared straight at the two.

The man behind them also stopped, and stared straight at the two of them.

At this moment, within the dark alley, there wasn't anybody else nearby. The emptiness made it feel very remote.

TangTang was stunned, she wore a blank face, unable to understand what was going on.

“TangTang.” Yang Chen gently asked, “Do you recognize the two of them?”

“I don't.....” TangTang replied, “My dad has many people like this by his side, so it's normal that I don't recognize them, perhaps they are new.”

Yang Chen smiled and said, “Yet you followed them out like this, being this silly isn't like you.”

“What can I do about that.....” TangTang pouted, then reprimanded the two men, “Why did you stop, go on!”

The moment those words were spoken, the two men who hadn't made a move suddenly charged forward. Their bodies darted forth towards Yang Chen like arrows!

Yang Chen calmly sidestepped, his toes tapped the ground, and his body soared into the sky. By utilizing the wall in the alley, he dodged the two's pincer attack by somersaulting over their heads!

But the attacks hadn't ended, two flat black objects shined with a cold light as they spun towards Yang Chen's body!

Yang Chen slightly twisted his body in mid-air, and the two concealed weapons narrowly missed him!

But before he could land, the two men once again attacked, a pair of cold daggers suddenly appeared in their hands, and they abruptly stabbed it towards Yang Chen's ribs!

Yang Chen's legs swung out in a way that defied gravity, and kicked away the two daggers.

The two men once again turned around and shot out another four dart-like weapons at lightning speed!

Yang Chen didn't let down his guard, he was prepared for this. He leaped into the air, and twisted his body to lower its surface area, dodging the two's attacks.

"Shuriken....." Yang Chen wore a weird smile when he landed and said, "The skill you guys throw them with is already at Jounin level, which organization are you guys from?"

It was unknown at what time did the two men get rid of their shells, looking at them now, their bodies were wrapped in black clothing, and they each had a short sword hung on their waists. The only thing exposed were their sharp eyes glaring straight at Yang Chen.

TangTang's paled from the situation that abruptly changed, she quickly ran to Yang Chen's back and hugged onto Yang Chen's back, then trembled and asked, "Who..... Who are these people?"

Yang Chen didn't turn his head as he said, "Don't be afraid, they won't harm you."

"Of course I'm not afraid....."

From behind, TangTang's voice suddenly lost all warmth!

An eerie yet bewitching voice was heard.....

"Pluto, you should worry about yourself first....."

Yang Chen hastily moved three steps away to look at TangTang with his eyes squinted.

He saw that the originally frightened TangTang had suddenly turned devilish with a bewitching charisma, while her shining eyes were as chilly as a viper about to spit its venom.

"Geez..... It's impossible to defend against that....." Yang Chen couldn't help but recite a line he heard from a movie. With a forced smile he said, "What did you do to me?"

‘TangTang’ sexily laughed and said, “I didn’t do much, it’s just a specially concocted poison; once it is applied on a person’s skin, it will quickly spread to that person’s whole body, and within five minutes it will cause all muscles to lose its ability to function. Which means..... temporarily having a vegetative state.....”

Right as ‘TangTang’ spoke, Yang Chen felt his whole body turning limp and painful. Gradually, he couldn’t remain standing anymore, and had to sit on the ground.....

“Hahahaha.....” The woman couldn’t help but laugh out loud, “Seems like the chief’s suggestions were simply unnecessary, Pluto doesn’t live up to his name, and isn’t difficult to manage.”

Yang Chen raised his head, and with a weak smile he said, “Your disguising techniques and poisoning techniques are indeed brilliant, it should have surpassed the Jounin level. You reached the level of being a special ninja, a Jinnin right.....?”

“So what if that’s the case?” The person impersonating TangTang walked to Yang Chen’s front and squatted. She tapped on Yang Chen’s chin, and enchantingly questioned, “Your majesty Pluto, isn’t it too late for you to see through my identity?”

Yang Chen shook his head, “It’s not too late, among the ninjas in Japan now, someone who has reached the level of Jinnin, and is an expert in poisons, there is only the number one beauty in the ninja world, Hannya, right.....”

“I’m very honored, for your majesty Pluto to know this little lady’s name.”

Despite having been identified, Hannya wasn’t worried at all, she chuckled and tore off her clothes in a relaxed manner, revealing her tight dark purple ninja uniform made of leather-esque materials.

Hannya’s figure was extremely sexy. She had breasts so well-developed that it seemed as if the ninja uniform couldn’t hold it in. They stretched the clothes as if they would break free at any moment. She also had a slim waist and an outstanding butt, her snow-white thighs were exposed to the air, and her face looked young and beautiful. Saying that she was beautiful enough to attract spirits and absorb souls wouldn’t be an exaggeration.

“One of the three great ninjas of the Yamata Sect, truly powerful.” Yang Chen rapaciously looked all over the mature female ninja, “I wonder if ‘Tengu’ and ‘Tanuki’ have come to Huaxia as well, I’ve been fascinated by the two of them for a long time.”

Hannya looked upon him with disdain. To her, he was just another man who turned muddle-headed after seeing a beauty, she sneered and said, “You seem to be in a leisurely good mood, Pluto. To even have the free time to care about how many members of our Yamata Sect came. We didn’t come here today to chat with you. Your majesty Pluto, please don’t beat about the bush.”

Yang Chen then said with a vacant expression, “Then what did you come here for?”

The smile on Hannya’s face instantly vanished, her voice turned as cold as an icecap— —

“God’s Stone! We want the God’s Stone!!”

§

Chapter 85: Flower Rain

“What God’s Stone?” Yang Chen frowned and displayed a confused expression that was both innocent and pitiful.

Hannya crossed her arms, squeezing her voluptuous curves into a seductive shape. Her soft-looking body stooped over, and she partially opened her mouth to blow out a breath that smelled like sweet incense.

“There’s no need to put on an act in front of me.” Hannya expressionlessly said. “Several years ago you single-handedly obliterated ZERO. Though you do not appear to be as strong as the legends say, so perhaps you borrowed support from others. However, the God’s Stone that was in ZERO’s possession disappeared without a trace during their destruction. All the powers have gone to the ruins of ZERO to search for it afterwards, yet they returned without any harvest. As long as someone has a brain, they would be able to guess that the God’s Stone is in your hands, and also the fact that you are the person who understands the value of the God’s Stone the most.....”

Hannya noticed that Yang Chen didn’t have any reaction, so she snorted and said, “If you had just stayed within your kingdom, perhaps we would’ve still restrained ourselves. But since you chose to return to Huaxia for no good reason, and even shook off your own subordinates, then don’t blame us for adopting such measures. Even if we didn’t take action, sooner or later somebody would. Everybody is just somewhat fearful of you, including the Yellow Flame Iron Brigade, that bunch of loyal and selfless Huaxia people. Those people just don’t have as much foresight as our chief. Pluto, don’t think that we wouldn’t burn you in the sacred fire, for in our eyes, there is only the great Emperor of Imperial Japan!”

“Yep.....” Yang Chen pouted and said, “Perhaps you don’t know this, but Huaxia is no longer under feudal rule. If you mention about things like kings and emperors, somebody will come to slaughter you.”

“Who?” Hannya’s brows raised as she smiled and said, “Do you think that

there's somebody capable of saving you?"

Right as those words were spoken, one of the two Jounin's who stood by a side suddenly stumbled backwards and crashed into the ground!

"Who!?" Hannya immediately entered battle state, and observed her surroundings in a composed manner.

The remaining Jounin did not allow the fall of his comrade to mess up his priorities as a pair of sai appeared in his hands, and he vigilantly observed his surroundings.

Right at that moment, from a space above the alley, a dark figure jumped across several weatherboards like a graceful swallow; it was like the elegant figure was performing a delightful acrobatics show.

"Careful!"

Hannya who noticed that something was amiss moved her feet, however it was already too late when she spoke out!

Sou!!!

After a thin and nearly inaudible tearing sound, the other Jounin did not manage to dodge, and a hole was suddenly cut open in his skull, blood spurted out!

After the Jounin fell to the ground in disbelief, the only one left standing in the alley was Hannya.

Hannya looked at the object that was shot down onto the floor. It was a tiny concealed weapon that looked like a thumbtack. She raised her head with a grave expression, looking at the person who had reached the ground, and said, "Yellow Flame Iron Brigade's Flower Rain?"

The one who jumped down from the roof was a tall woman. She wore a pair of considerably tight black t-shirt and jeans, showing the outline of her well-developed yet dainty, her hair that grew over her shoulders lightly brushed across her cold face from the night wind, like a blossoming black rose in the night.

"This is not a place you people should be in." Flower Rain's voice wasn't very

impactful, but the meaning behind it was clearly apparent. She was extremely disgusted by the woman in front of her.

Hannya cleared up her thoughts, chuckled and said, “To think that Pluto and the Yellow Flame Iron Brigade have already formed a collaboration that they would go so far to actually send Flower Rain, a member of the Group of Eight as a bodyguard. If this information leaks out, who knows what those old fellas from the other countries that have been maintaining peace on the surface would think. Oh, by the way, does this mean that the God’s Stone has already been handed over to Huaxia?”

“No wonder you are stuck at the Jinnin level, it’s apparent that your talent is limited.....”

Yang Chen then suddenly stood up in a casual manner, wearing a playful smile as he patted away the dust on his trousers. “If I required protection from her, I would’ve died ten years ago.”

“How did you.....” Hannya finally lost her composure with disbelief written all over her face, “How can you stand up!?”

“I was able to stand all along. I was just playing along with you earlier.” Yang Chen then glanced at Flower Rain who maintained her silence, saying, “Moreover, if I didn’t act like that, who knows when this woman would finally show herself? I don’t want to be followed forever.”

Hannya was so angry that her face was flushed, “You knew from the very start that I was an impostor!?”

“At the start it was only just a hunch because when you came out of the toilet, the yellow color that was left on her tongue from drinking orange juice had disappeared. Well, you could think of it as my powers of observation being too abnormal, but I really noticed it only by chance.” Yang Chen then continued to say, “Afterwards, you actually decided to directly follow the two men you weren’t familiar with. In addition, what I saw from the two men’s eyes when they looked at you was pure reverence, without the slightest bit of tenderness or concern. This could be considered as you guys having subpar acting skills.”

“So you’ve been using me all along!” Hannya felt incomparably humiliated, the disguising technique that she was most adept with was seen through by this

lecherous man!

“Wrong, it’s your Yamata Sect that came looking for trouble. I didn’t invite you guys, isn’t that right, Miss Flower Rain?” Yang Chen winked towards Flower Rain, this young and pretty lady was actually a member of the Group of Eight in the Yellow Flame Iron Brigade, which was even more mysterious than the Dragon Team, while finding this hard to believe, Yang Chen felt that her looks seemed rather familiar.

Flower Rain didn’t reply his question, and instead asked, “You aren’t poisoned?”

Yang Chen shook his head, “I am, but a poison like this is too weak, and not enough to affect me.”

Hannya looked at Yang Chen as if she was looking at a freak, she found it hard to believe and said, “That’s impossible! This poison can even paralyze an elephant, you…… you monster……”

Yang Chen grinned, “Bingo! You guessed correctly, but unfortunately I can’t give you any points.”

“It would be best if you worry about yourself first.” Flower Rain raised her arm. In her hands was a silver pocket-sized pistol.

Hannya understood that this type of pistol couldn’t shoot bullets, but it could shoot nail shaped concealed weapons that was no way inferior to bullets while being completely silent. This was a commonly used method in the world of killers, but there had been gossips for a long time that the Group of Eight’s Flower Rain herself came from Huaxia’s ancient Tang Sect. Because she inherited the extremely mysterious technique “Sky-filling Flower Rain,” “Flower Rain” became her code name.

Other than from her gun, her concealed weapons could be shot from anywhere on her body!

Originally there was only Flower Rain, as one of the Yamata Sect’s three great Jinnins, Hannya wouldn’t be that fearful of her, for she could be a match. But behind her stood an unfathomable “sinister man” who had an indescribable bearing. Hannya knew that she couldn’t force a fight.

“If you want to flee, then quickly flee.” Yang Chen saw through what Hannya had in mind, and urged her on.

Hannya hatefully glared at him, and all of a sudden her body turned blurry. In the end, like a ball of smoke, she vanished from where she stood.

Flower Rain pursed her beautiful eyebrows, a light shined in her eyes. The pocket-sized pistol in her right hand swapped over to her left at lightning speed, she turned to the left and shot two nail shaped concealed weapons!

Sou! Sou!

The two concealed weapons streaked through its path and embedded itself into the cement wall!

A portion of torn purple-red ribbon fell from mid-air, while Hannya’s figure completely faded away from the alley.

“Escape techniques.....” Flower Rain unwillingly kept her pistol, and questioned Yang Chen, “You have the capability of keeping her here, why didn’t you take action!?”

Yang Chen shrugged, “If I took action, wouldn’t that truly mean that I’m in cahoots with you guys?”

“You’re originally a person of Huaxia.” Flower Rain pretty face frosted over, “She’s our country’s enemy.”

“If you catch her, it’ll attract more enemies.” Yang Chen pointed, “I will naturally take action if she appears in the future, but now is definitely not the time.”

“Spineless man.” Flower Rain looked at Yang Chen with disdain, and turned away to leave.

Yang Chen didn’t get angry as he thought of another matter, and quickly called, “Don’t leave first. You look extremely similar to a policewoman I know, are you perhaps her sister?” To be honest, he didn’t really give a damn about Hannya, but Flower Rain here was honestly looked very alike to Cai Yan.

Flower Rain halted and didn’t turn back. With a slightly warm tone she said, “She is my younger sister.”

So that was the case. Yang Chen happily nodded, they were actually a pair of beautiful sisters. He then asked, “What about that girl TangTang? Have you saved her yet?”

“She’s already safe. However, her clothes had been stolen, so I called her family’s bodyguards, and gave her some clothes to wear. She should already have returned home.”

Satisfied, Yang Chen nodded, “You’re quite good at handling these matters. It looks like there isn’t anything bad about being followed by you.”

“My mission is a failure, so I won’t be following you in the future. These corpses will immediately be handled by specialists, you should leave quickly.” As she finished speaking, Flower Rain left the alley.

Chapter 86: This is more like you

At the end, Yang Chen was the only one that returned back to the main street, the meal that TangTang wanted to treat had ended in a dramatic fashion. However, that girl was pitiful too, getting impersonated and swapped away just from going to the toilet, and even losing her clothes. Yang Chen hoped that she wouldn't remember to treat him to a meal anytime soon either.

There wasn't anywhere good to have a meal nearby, as it was no longer early, and with some thought, he rode his car to ROSE bar; as if nothing happened earlier.

When he arrived at ROSE bar, there were already quite a number of people drinking and chatting inside. The bar recently changed its mood. In the lounge, Mozart's violin sonata was being played. There weren't many guests, but the ambience was much better than the other messy bars.

What made Yang Chen a little surprised was that Chen Rong was already donning a server's attire and working.

After the lily-like pure teenage girl took a bath and put on this contrasting black-white attire, her eyes appeared rather youthful and bright with the dirt and weariness washed off. Especially her innocent pretty face, it was white and clean like snow, yet moist and tender like a flower.

Seeing Yang Chen enter, Chen Rong somewhat bashfully called out to her "Big brother Yang."

Yang Chen knew that Chen Rong wasn't accustomed yet, and joked, "If Little Zhao and the others bully you, let me know and I'll beat them up for you."

When Little Zhao and the others heard this, they voiced out their grievance, "Big bro Yang how could we dare? She was recommended by you, and is even taken care of by the boss herself. We can't wait to curry favor with Little Rong, how would we dare to bully her?"

Touched, Chen Rong sweetly smiled, said "thank you," then ran to the back to

help.

Looking at Chen Rong from behind, Yang Chen revealed a smile of relief. He then walked along the aisle at the back of the bar. He didn't know what Rose wanted to talk to him about, but he needed to have a meal first.

Entering Rose's bedroom that had her enchanting body fragrance all over, the beautiful woman's figure was nowhere to be found.

With his sharp hearing, Yang Chen quickly noticed that there was the sound of water splashing from the room's attached toilet.

She's showering?

Yang Chen felt that he should carefully inquire whether she needed help. For example he could help clean a certain place on her lower body, or perhaps massage in water, even spectating and studying how she showered would be good.

In any case, Yang Chen felt that he had many reasons to enter and watch Rose shower.

Sneakily pushing the glass door open, it was steamy inside, there was condensate all over the mirror that refracted the gentle light, causing the bathroom to seem rather sexy yet bright and clean.

Just as Yang Chen wanted to close in on the shower stall to initiate intimate contact with Rose in such a way that she wouldn't be able to resist, Yang Chen felt that something was amiss.

Although the frosted glass of the shower stall had water splashing against it, Rose's alluring figure didn't seem to be inside.....

I've been toyed with!?

Yang Chen suddenly turned his head back, and as expected, Rose was standing at the door of the ceiling-to-floor window with a mischievous smile. Her pleased smile resembled a jester that just toyed with a monkey.

This woman is turning more and more uncute. Yang Chen angrily thought, but maintained a calm and composed look on his face. He opened the door to the shower stall and turned off the tap, and said, "Darling Rose, I think it's better to

turn off the tap if you're not showering, saving water is a good habit."

Rose finally couldn't hold in her laughter and laughed out loud, she rocked back and forth before finally stifling it back down again and said, "I finally beat you, looks like the best way to deal with you is to use methods meant for dealing with perverts."

"Like I said, this concerns the problem of conserving water." Yang Chen held on to this reasoning and refused to let go. He then sat on the bed and lied down, and quickly changed the topic, "I haven't had dinner yet."

Rose didn't expose what he just did, she instead tapped her chin to think and said, "Do you want to try my cooking skills?"

"You know how to cook?" Yang Chen was a little unconvinced, food cooked by an underworld boss?

Rose rolled her eyes at him and walked to a white wall in the room, pushed against it, and it was revealed that that part of the wall was actually a well concealed wooden door.

After that wooden door was opened, an 8 square metre kitchen appeared, like a refined kitchen of an ordinary family.

Yang Chen's mouth was wide open, "Why do I have no idea about such a place?"

Rose grudgingly looked at him, "Whenever you come, all you do is bad things to me, how would you know about what happens in my life?"

Being criticized, Yang Chen began to sweat and awkwardly smiled. He was the one who picked out this delicate fresh flower, but he truly didn't put in effort to tend to her daily

Rose let the topic end there, and cleverly asked, "Dear, what do you want to eat?"

"Anything is fine, as long as it can fill the stomach." Yang Chen didn't have any special requests.

Rose's cooking skills were beyond expectations, when Yang Chen picked up the plate of beef fried rice with cilantro sprinkled on top, he immediately began

wolfing it down.

The considerate Rose also served a bowl of Sichuan vegetable egg drop soup. This meal may be simple, but it was very well suited to Yang Chen who had a life full of bitter, toiling work.

After he ate, Rose took out a wet tissue and thoroughly cleaned his mouth, like a cute young wife serving her husband, her devoted look nearly made Yang Chen's bones turn into jelly.

Subsequently, Rose cleaned up the table and washed them in the kitchen, while Yang Chen switched on the TV to watch the news. They looked just like a couple in an ordinary family who had gotten off work; the two of them understood each other tacitly without the need for words.

Once all the chores were done, Rose closed the door to the kitchen, as if that meal didn't happen at all.

Unhurriedly, Rose sat down by Yang Chen's side, her alluring body that wore a silky translucent nightgown naturally leaned into Yang Chen's bosom, and she shifted her body to find a comfortable position, accompanying Yang Chen in watching the news quietly just like this.

"Thank you." When some time passed, Rose softly muttered.

"Thank me for what?" Yang Chen asked.

"I really like that kind of feeling from earlier. When I brought out the food for you, I enjoyed watching you finish the dishes I cooked, and I also liked how you sat nearby to watch the TV while I washed the dishes; I can feel that you're by my side, and that I'm not alone in this room....."

Yang Chen affectionately stroked Rose's face, "I like it too, though it would be even better if you cooked a larger serving."

"I wish that everyday could be like this..... though that just isn't possible."

"I will strive to make that possible." Yang Chen replied, "I rarely make promises to women, so you have to believe me."

"Why is it that after you accepted me, the way you speak has totally changed?" Rose looked at Yang Chen with confused eyes, "In the past you would

never ask of me to trust you, because you never allowed me to trust you..... Is it because you're now afraid of me? Afraid to lose me?"

Yang Chen faintly shook his head, he held Rose's silky white body in his arms, "In this world there isn't a man that is afraid of a woman, there are only men who respect women."

"But all those men who are my subordinates are afraid of me." Rose stared straight at Yang Chen.

"That's because they aren't your men, you are my woman." Yang Chen replied.

Rose sweetly smiled, "This is more like you."

Yang Chen dotingly pinched the woman's nose, "Alright, you've heard the words you wanted to hear, next up you should say what you want to say for me to hear. I don't believe that you would specially call me over just to hear my sweet speech and honeyed words."

"You're not giving me any time to bask in happiness, a real mood killer." Although Rose spoke discontentedly, but she still sat up in the end, and resolutely spoke, "My father sent me an invitation letter, and wants me to participate in a party."

"Your father? Situ Mingze?" Yang Chen puzzlingly said, "Haven't the two of you gone separate ways? He still has the cheek to send you an invitation letter?"

Rose tartly smiled and said, "It's different this time, there's a special guest."

"Who?"

"Zhou Guangnian and his son."

Yang Chen wracked his mind over trying to recall the information regarding Zhong Hai's underworld that Rose previously provided him with before remembering who Zhou Guangnian was.

If one was to say that the West Union Society and Red Thorns Society were adversaries that were evenly matched in the west region, then the east region would seem much more peaceful in comparison. This is because over ten years ago, with the nickname 'Old Catfish', Zhou Guangnian had already conquered the entire east region of Zhong Hai through means of arms trafficking and drugs.

These years of development and expansion led Zhou Guangnian who was purely an underworld boss grow into a half underworld, half real world overlord in the east region. Even their gang's name 'Dongxing Gang' was turned into 'Dongxing Group'.

Zhou Guangnian's son had already deeply rooted himself in this fertile land called Zhong Hai. It didn't matter whether it was the West Union Society or the Red Thorns Society, in Zhou Guangnian's eyes, they all seemed puny.

A few years ago, before Rose deserted Situ Mingze and parted ways to set up the Red Thorns Society, the West Union Society had enough strength to compete on the same level as the Dongxing Group, but now that the west region has been split into two, they seemed extremely frail in front of the Dongxing Group.

For Zhou Guangnian and his son to take part in Situ Mingze's small scale party at this time, possessed a message that was worth pondering over.

Yang Chen had a little headache as he asked, "What do you intend to do?"

"What other choice do I have?" Rose forced a smile, "Although I can choose not to give them face, the Dongxing Group's strength is not something that we could contend against at this moment. If I don't go, that would be facilitating Dongxing and West Union Society to join hands in dealing with us." When she reached this point, Rose paused to look at Yang Chen, then continued, "Perhaps because you're here, we could do what we did with Chen Dehai, capture the boss first followed by his followers. However, the Dongxing Group has already formed into a tightly knitted group a long time ago. Even if Zhou Guangnian and his son are killed, there would still be a large number of Dongxing's members against us. Nothing would happen to the two of us, but I can't ignore the well-being of my fellow brothers and sisters."

"Which means, you're perfectly aware that there's a tiger on that mountain, yet you still choose to hike on that mountain to meet that tiger?" Yang Chen more or less understood her intentions.

Rose suddenly showed a queer smile, leaned close to Yang Chen's ears and whispered something.

Yang Chen immediately wiped his forehead and put on his guard as he looked

at Rose, “I say that you’re a vixen yet you still don’t admit it? Looks like you’ve already made the decision to treat me as Wu Song.”

[TL: Wu Song is a fictional character from the classic novel Water Margin who is well-known to have killed a tiger with his bare hands.]

Rose hugged Yang Chen’s elbow, and flirtatiously said, “In any case, in a couple of days when the time comes you must follow me there, you can’t leave me all alone.”

Feeling Rose’s exquisite soft chest coming into contact with his elbow, Yang Chen who had been thinking of doing a certain thing ever since he ate his fill felt that it was time to do it. Right as he was about to extend his evil claws to that mysterious hemisphere shaped area, the phone in his pocket suddenly rang.

He gloomily took out the phone to take a look, the caller was Wang Ma. The last few times Wang Ma called, something bad had happened, therefore Yang Chen didn’t hesitate and quickly answered.

§

Chapter 87: Will you support me

“Hello, Wang Ma? What’s the matter?”

On the other side of the line, Wang Ma seemed to have difficulty trying to speak her mind, she hesitated for a moment before saying, “Young Master, I accidentally slipped and fell, spraining my ankle in the process and now I can’t drive.”

Wang Ma may not be 50 years old yet, but the passing of time spares nobody. Yang Chen anxiously asked, “Is it serious? How about I go home now to drive you to the hospital?”

“Don’t, don’t, going to the hospital isn’t needed for a small matter like this, I just need to rest for a day or two. However, I was just about to send Miss some things, and have no way of sending it now, so.....”

Yang Chen relaxed, he was afraid that something bad had happened, “I shall return now, a small matter like this should be done by me in the first place.”

Wang Ma happily replied, “Actually something like this shouldn’t be sent by you, Young Master. But Miss has few friends, and those that could spare some time to do something like this are even fewer. I’m also too embarrassed to trouble Miss Mo and Secretary Wu Yue again, they’re extremely busy with work, which is why I have no choice but to trouble you to do this, Young Master.”

“It’s alright, I’ll come back now.”

Yang Chen hung up the phone, and saw Rose deeply staring at him, while also looking a little resentful.

“Erm..... I got to go.” Yang Chen rubbed his chin and said while averting his gaze.

“As expected, the mistress isn’t as important as the wife.” Rose sighed with an aggrieved tone and said, “Go on, I won’t be angry.”

“Darling Rose is truly obedient.” Yang Chen laughed, and moved up to kiss that white and tender face, “Do you want me to come over later tonight?”

Rose shook her head, “You don’t need to, I will be very busy for the next few days, after all I’m not familiar enough with the situation regarding Dongxing, and have to make a lot of preparations.”

Yang Chen understandingly nodded, and was about to open the door, when he heard Rose behind him abruptly utter one line—— “Is that CEO of yours really prettier than me?”

Yang Chen’s knees turned weak, he nearly stumbled head-first into the door, he turned back with a forced smile, “So you know everything now.....”

◦

With a bad taste in his mouth, Yang Chen left ROSE bar. He worried over whether an internal battle among his harem would occur in the future, like those shown on TV, the ladies stab at each other, and after all the stabbing even their husband couldn’t recognize them anymore.....

He shook his head to get rid of all those irrelevant notions in his mind, it was just a joke that could never happen. With Lin Ruoxi’s cold countenance, she probably didn’t even care whether he had a relationship with other women.

He speedily drove back to the villa at Dragon Garden, and Wang Ma was already waiting at the door carrying a large Estee Lauder paper bag in her hands. The opening of the paper bag was tightly sealed, in order to conceal the things inside.

Yang Chen didn’t mind that, and after he received the paper bag, he looked at Wang Ma’s leg with concern, “Are you able to walk? Why were you so careless?”

Wang Ma was very gratified as she shook her head, “Thank you for your care Young Master, I just fell due to carelessness, it’s not the first time. It’s better that you quickly send this to Miss, I’m afraid Miss will feel unwell if you’re too late.....”

“Unwell?” Although Yang Chen was curious as to why she would feel unwell if she received something late, he didn’t ask, and turned to leave the villa.

20 minutes later, Yang Chen was right outside Lin Ruoxi’s room. After he confirmed that there was no one else inside, he entered.

Lin Ruoxi leaned against her bed, and her hair was casually draped over her shoulders. The lights illuminated her rosy cheeks, and she appeared attractive and lovely.

At that moment, she held a book and was absorbed in reading. When she noticed Yang Chen enter, she unexpectedly gave a slight nod.

Is this considered a greeting?

Yang Chen felt a little weird, because Lin Ruoxi always treated him coldly and indifferently in the past, this was the first time she greeted him while they were alone.

“I’m here to send you something, Wang Ma sprained her ankle, so it isn’t convenient for her to come.” Yang Chen placed the paper bag onto the cabinet, and sat on a stool at the side and asked, “How is your recovery going? Recuperating via Chinese medicine should be effective, right?”

Lin Ruoxi put down her book, and took out her hand from under the blanket to rub her eyes, “It’s alright, it actually doesn’t need to be so long, so much work is being held up.”

“Working all year round, signing documents and reading finance books even when in the hospital, aren’t you tired? A woman shouldn’t treat herself so badly.” Yang Chen felt that he should give this female workaholic a lesson, “You’re still young, don’t always lock yourself up in the office and the study. When you have time you should go have a massage, spa, soak in a hot spring, or have a milk bath. Find a sunny day to chat with your girl friends, and drink black tea in the afternoon. When the weather is hot go to the ice cream shop to have a strawberry shortcake ice cream, and when the weather is cold go to a tropical area to bask in the sun and have a holiday. When there’s nothing better to do after work you can go to the shopping street to have a stroll, walking by without buying a thing, and only trying out items; isn’t that what you women love to do the most? Also, the cars in your garage are enough to open a car show, you should race with them too, and if nobody accompanies you in racing, I will! But you’d have to reimburse the fuel expenses.....”

Lin Ruoxi remained indifferent, after hearing these words, she instead pointed at the bag to ask, “What did you bring?”

“Can you not be like this, I provided you with so many great suggestions, did you hear a thing?!” Yang Chen felt that little sister Lin had a very bad attitude.

Lin Ruoxi slowly sighed, and asked with a clear voice, “If I don’t work hard, what would happen to the thousands of workers in the company? What would happen to the employees’ innumerable family members? What would happen to the Lin family’s properties left behind by my grandma and mother? What would I do? Will you support me?”

“Erm.....”

The sudden chain of problematic issues made Yang Chen feel a little numb in the head, the words “will you support me,” were those words that Lin Ruoxi knew how to say?

“Is this an ‘interrogative sentence’ or a ‘declarative sentence’?” With an embarrassed smile, Yang Chen returned to his senses, and carefully asked with much consideration.

Lin Ruoxi looked at the man who had a ‘timid expression’ with some disappointment, she felt that the words she said was quite funny, how could he substitute for her? How could she let a man who used to sell mutton skewers, who plays games all day in the office, without any goals in life to share her responsibility? Lin Ruoxi began to think that she was having a fever.

Could it be because of that box of glutinous rice balls he sent me, which made me become hopeful for him?

What is fake is in the end fake, and will probably never ever become real.

Lin Ruoxi didn’t plan on lingering on this subject, and didn’t reply Yang Chen. She moved her hand to lift the paper bag on top the cabinet, but because the bag was pretty big, it was strenuous for Lin Ruoxi to pick it up from the bed, and so she thought she might as well flip it over, and pour whatever that was inside onto the bed.....

A bunch of things rolled out from the inside, without even mentioning the colors of it, if these things appeared in any room, the temperature of said room would raise by a few degrees in a flash.....

So that’s why Wang Ma kept hesitating over whether to let Yang Chen bring

these over or not, inside the paper bag was actually all kinds of undergarments. There were panties, bras, and stockings. There weren't only various colors of lace designs, there were even brazen open-hole designs, and thong designs.

If it was said that these sexy underwear made Yang Chen's nose turn hot, then Lin Ruoxi's other undergarments which had a totally different style seemed extremely 'frightening' to him.

The Hello Kitty, Snoopy, Winnie the Pooh, and various other cartoon-printed white and pink panties were enough to make Yang Chen's eyes fall to the ground!

What was worse was, within these undergarments, there were even 4 boxes of well-packaged imported tampons..... It seemed like they were all top grade feminine hygiene products that Lin Ruoxi was accustomed to, which was why it had to be specially brought from home.

Yang Chen finally understood what Wang Ma meant by 'unwell', as it turns out, his lord wife's "few days out of every month" had come.

In his mind their encounter on that night at the nightclub surfaced, along with the series of twists and turns after that. Once he thought about Lin Ruoxi's seductive figure with these garments on, Yang Chen found it difficult to suppress his evil thoughts, he looked at Lin Ruoxi who lost her head out of fear with a heated gaze.

"You're not allowed to look!" Lin Ruoxi finally lost her calm, and forcefully flipped her blanket to cover her personal belongings under it. That soft pretty face turned from one belonging to an ice-cold goddess to a bright red apple in a split second.

I was careless! Once she thought about how Yang Chen had seen her hoard of sexy underwear that she had secretly bought, along with the underwear with cartoon character prints she liked, Lin Ruoxi felt like dying!

Wang Ma is too much, she didn't even inform me before having these things sent. Furthermore, why didn't she just bring some ordinary undergarments, if she did that I wouldn't be so humiliated!

If Wang Ma knew about the thoughts in Lin Ruoxi's heart at this moment, she

definitely wouldn't know whether to laugh or to cry. It wasn't that she didn't want to bring ordinary ones, the problem was that she truly couldn't find a pair of ordinary ones in Lin Ruoxi's room!

Cough Cough..... Yang Chen feigned an indifferent face, "Erm, the stuff has been delivered, I think I should go now, rest early."

"Yep....." Lin Ruoxi replied with a thin mosquito-like voice, she wished that she could just throw Yang Chen out of the window.

Yang Chen moved to the door with great difficulty, and couldn't resist turning back to say, "That pink pair of Mickey Mouse panties is pretty good, I like it."

"....."

Out of the hospital and in the car, Yang Chen still found it difficult to forget Lin Ruoxi's expression at the end, that fuming, moist and wide open eyes, lovely scarlet dimples, and that 'I want to kill you' look, were so much prettier than her default cold appearance.

After knowing her for some time, he felt that this woman was truly cute sometimes. She was previously cold and noble like an empress, yet he gradually realized some things. She liked to watch those romantic tear-jerking Japanese and Korean dramas, liked to eat glutinous rice balls which is usually well-liked by children, and even eats it by holding it with two hands and slowly nibbling at it. Today, he realized that she didn't just wear erotic undergarments, which was contrary to her usual conservative style, she also wore cartoon-styled undergarments for little girls.....

Unknowingly, Yang Chen recalled the little details of their days together. The car had already moved quite a long distance, and when he returned to his senses, Yang Chen was astonished when he realized that he had subconsciously driven the car to a place worth reminiscing—— The small bar where he had first met Lin Ruoxi.

He thought about how he carried Lin Ruoxi back to his dilapidated flat after drinking, followed by that night of madness. The fire that started in Yang Chen's heart earlier due to the undergarments once again blazed up high.

Within a short period of time, a flame was induced by two women on this

night, yet it still wasn't extinguished, this made Yang Chen feel terrible.

Men are often animals that think with their lower halves. Despite the fact that he had hunted a top grade beauty in this place, it was unlikely a second one would appear. Perhaps there wasn't even a second one in the whole of Zhong Hai. But Yang Chen still stopped the car, and chose to go in knowingly.

It wasn't for any other reason but to find someone suitable to extinguish the fire in him.

§

Chapter 88: Knight who draws his sword and charges into battle

Before entering the bar, Yang Chen took note of the gaudy green neon-lit signboard on the bar's entrance. He didn't pay attention of this before.

This bar, Brambles, had a strange name. The limestone wall and dark brown wooden decorations on the entrance exuded a medieval european castle-like ambience. Perhaps this was a good method of attracting a particular group of people. At that time, at the very least, Lin Ruoxi chose this little bar to drink her worries away.

The moment Yang Chen stepped into the bar, a soothing piano sound hit him. If his memory served him right, Yang Chen believed that this was Hungarian Rhapsody composed by Franz Liszt.

The name of this piece always gives people the misconception of it being rough and fierce, but the fact was that this piece was elegant and grand. Like a gorgeous cruise that was going with the flow of a meandering river, drifting in the waters.

For music like that to appear in this small bar added more charm onto this bar's medieval style.

Some of the tables and chairs which were at the middle of the bar had been moved to the side. A number of young men and women gathered together at the center as they displayed happy smiles and flirtatious glances.

In a town like this where stress was widespread, the disco music used for dancing could not satisfy this bunch of white collars' psychological needs. They chose a small bar that had piano music and a refined ambience to gather and convey the dissatisfaction they had towards society in their hearts, while satisfying a little bit of their aloofness.

After hearing this piece, the fire that was in Yang Chen's heart gradually calmed down. He did not lecherously search the bar for female organisms that

wore various clothes. He instead walked up to the bar counter, and asked the bartender for a cup of ordinary whisky.

The smell of perfume and alcohol permeated the bar. Yang Chen quietly sat a corner of the bar, drinking the amber-colored liquid on his own. All he could hear was people nearby chatting to each other, Yang Chen enjoyed an environment like this which was full of happiness very much.

But the time he spent peacefully didn't last long, from another dark corner of the bar, a woman leisurely but elegantly walked over. She wore a blue dress, had fair skin, long legs, and an elegant figure. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that she was exquisite yet fine. She only had light makeup, yet it seemed as if her face was elaborately drawn by an artist, it was exquisite and had an air of classical gracefulness. Her hair that draped over her shoulders were slightly curled at the ends, and she wore a pair of silver earrings. She had an aura similar to that of a western top model who casually came out after work, the only difference was that her figure was slightly petite in comparison.

This was a woman that was easy to like when meeting for the first time. Her beauty wasn't breathtaking to the point where it would cause one's heartbeat to accelerate, but it was still difficult to resist.

"Mister, will I be fortunate enough to be invited to drink with you?" The woman raised the glass in her hand, then raised her head in an elegant manner, and drunk the remaining Crème de menthe in said glass. She then placed the glass onto the bar counter, and looked at Yang Chen with a smile.

It wasn't just men that would look for a prey, women too would look for prey.

As someone who had been looked upon as prey before, Yang Chen didn't feel uncomfortable about this. He relaxedly smiled, and snapped his fingers.

"What would you like, Miss?" The bartender quick-wittedly asked the woman directly.

A fluent London accent came out from the woman's mouth as if it was natural. It didn't give an impression of bragging, it was as if this was how she usually spoke.

"Wh..... What?" It was apparent that this young bartender's english wasn't

good.

“Brandy Alexander, or Alexandra.” Yang Chen kindly helped the bartender who was in a bind.

The bartender had been through similar situations, so he thanked Yang Chen, gave the lady an apologetic smile, and began to mix fluently.

When the woman received the cocoa colored cocktail in her hands, she looked at Yang Chen with appreciation, “Sorry about that, I’ve been overseas for the last few years, so I don’t know how to call for drinks in this country. However, not many people know the name Alexandra, looks like Mister is well-educated when it comes to drinks.”

Yang Chen gently toasted to the lady, “To commemorate the King of Britain Edward the 7th and Queen Alexandra’s marriage, this cocktail was made as a present for the queen. Many women like the taste of this drink. If a man has the heart to understand women, then for a man to know all this is nothing special.”

“But amongst the men who entered this place, you’re the only man who didn’t go looking for a woman.”

“Even if I didn’t look, didn’t you come over?” Yang Chen said with a gentle smile.

The woman looked at Yang Chen for a moment, and suddenly stretched out her fair and delicate hand, “An Xin, the An from Bu An(the word peace from unpeaceful) and Xin from Xinfan(the word heart from annoying).”

[TL: For those that still don’t get it, Her name ‘An Xin’ sort of means peaceful heart, it’s a common phrase in chinese, yet she introduced her name with a strange interpretation of unpeaceful and annoying.]

“What a unique introduction.” Yang Chen felt that things were becoming interesting. This woman didn’t just have looks that met his demands, even her personality and way of speech greatly suited her to be his partner for a one night stand. He stretched out his hand to shake An Xin’s hand, “Yang Chen, when you need to write down my name, I will tell you which two words they are.”

“Your introduction is even more special, but at least it’s much more interesting than other men.” An Xin wittily blinked, “Congratulations, you’ve aroused my

interest.”

“What interest?” Yang Chen said, “You want to know my body is made of? If you’re willing to trade at an equal price, perhaps we can reach a mutual understanding.”

An Xin didn’t mind his thinly veiled suggestion, “I suspect that such words may not be from the true you, and that’s what sparked my interest. To simply put, I wanted to see if the man in front of me could meet the requirements to be my intimate male companion.”

“Miss An, the truth in this world doesn’t exist, if you’re willing to, I feel that you should make a judgement based on the sharp intuition you ladies have.” Yang Chen brazenly measured An Xin up and down, it seemed to him that this woman needed to get some things done, so many things could be straightforwardly said.

An Xin tilted his head, and her smooth hair slightly covered her cheeks that were flushed due to the alcohol. Her breath smelled like orchids, and her eyes were misty as she asked, “Could you explain? I don’t really understand what you mean, Mr. Yang.”

While being kept in suspense, Yang Chen felt helpless towards this quick-witted lady. *I’ve already made it clear to you that I want to sleep with you. What are you asking so much for?* But he had to maintain the mood, so he returned with a question, “Miss An, do you know who invented the radio?”

“Anyone who studied would know that, it’s Marconi.” An Xin slightly frowned, this sudden change of topic was a little abrupt, but she was witty, and asked, “Do you mean that that isn’t the truth?”

“According to a majority of the countries in the west, it was indeed Marconi who invented the radio. However, in the textbooks of Soviet Russia, it was always Popov; in Germany, it’s Hertz; in America, it’s Dreyfus. To make it simpler, Russia’s Popov had successfully researched radio technology decades before Marconi, but because he required funding amounting to 1000 rubles, the Russian army directly rejected his great invention as absurd. Hence, decades later, Marconi received the Nobel Prize.”

An Xin fixed her gaze on Yang Chen, after a short while, she chuckled, “Mr.

Yang, although I don't know whether what you said was true or not, but there has never been a man who spoke such words to me in a bar with a romantic ambience."

Yang Chen drank a mouthful of his whisky, and gently swirled the drink in his hand, "It's nothing, does Miss An like it?"

An Xin suddenly bent her body forward, closed in to Yang Chen's face, and her moist lips pecked on his cheek. She then charmingly smiled and said, "Congratulations, tonight I'm yours."

"Happy to serve you." Yang Chen smugly put down the glass, he finally succeeded in acting cool. He grabbed An Xin's wrist with his hand, and prepared to leave the bar.

But right at this time, 5 robust men in suits suddenly charged into the bar, they all had impatient expressions, but when they saw Yang Chen intimately holding onto An Xin's hand, they all expressed anger.

"Miss An, please return with us." The leading man in black spoke with a commanding tone.

The guests in the bar noticed the tense situation all quieted down to watch what was about to happen.

An Xin indifferently looked at the few men in black, then calmly turned to look at Yang Chen. Seeing how relaxed Yang Chen looked without even a tinge of fear, she was a little impressed, "Apparently passing my test isn't enough, Mr. Yang, will you choose to abandon the pitiful little sheep, or become a knight who draws his sword and charges into battle?"

Yang Chen inwardly sighed, sure enough, good women weren't so easy to get, but since he was already in the mood, trouble didn't matter. He looked at An Xin with a playful smile, "If Miss An can bless me with a kiss, I believe tonight we would have such a great time that it would be remembered for a lifetime."

Without the slightest hesitation, like a teenage girl from an aristocratic family in love, An Xin gracefully hugged Yang Chen's neck, raised her pretty face, and left a hot and moist kiss on Yang Chen lips. Before leaving it, she even used the tip of her wet tongue to trace a mark on Yang Chen's face.

“Please bravely battle, my dear knight.” An Xin released Yang Chen’s neck, and stood behind him.

The robust men in black were once again angered, and their leader fiercely glared at Yang Chen, “Youngster, you will regret this night for your whole life.”

Yang Chen sneered, leisurely picked up his glass on the bar counter, and directly splashed the remainder of the drink at that man without warning.

The leader simply didn’t expect Yang Chen to insult him like this, and wasn’t able to dodge it. Half of his suit was stained by the drink.

“You’re courting death!”

The leader cursed, charged forward and swung a fist at Yang Chen’s face.

Yang Chen easily blocked this fist which looked really strong to others, and he dexterously grasped the man’s wrist with his palm. Without waiting for the man to make use of his other hand, Yang Chen forcibly twisted the man’s arm to a horrifying angle!

The man who was about to resist released a blood-curdling screech, and his whole body involuntarily followed along the twisted arm like he was playing the role of a spinning top in front of Yang Chen.

Behind Yang Chen, An Xin’s eyes shone, she looked at Yang Chen’s relaxed back, incredibly but pleasantly surprised.

The other men in black finally realized how abnormal the situation was. They loudly cried out and was about to surround and attack Yang Chen.

“Here, take this back.” Yang Chen looked at the few men coming forward, so he abruptly grabbed onto the man’s other arm, and while standing sideways he fiercely threw the man over as if he was just playing with a rag doll!

The man who was about two meters tall was thrown as if he was a baguette, and loudly smashed into the other men!

Seeing the tall and strong men in black all fall with their backs against the ground, everybody present were shocked. *How can this man be strong to this degree!?*

“Let’s go get a room.” Yang Chen dragged An Xin by the end, stepped on the

men in black who were whining in pain, then left the bar in a cool and collected manner.

Chapter 89: Please undress me

Many women have beautiful dreams of their prince charming. They dreamed about encountering a dangerous situation, then a handsome, dashing, and mighty noble prince falls from the sky. The prince defeats the evil villain, embraces them and gives them a deep kiss. Then swears an oath of eternal love.

An Xin was no exception. She was very rational at a young age, and understood the reasoning that the one riding the white horse might not be a prince, and that he might even be Tang Seng, but despite all that, she would still have a dream like that occasionally.

[TL: Tang Seng is a famous monk who plays a lead role in one of the four classic novels Journey to the West. His steed is the White Dragon Horse, the third son of the Dragon King of the West Sea. Looks like an ordinary white horse in the TV adaptations though.]

This happened especially when she was in a situation with no other alternatives. For the few days that she spent back in the country, An Xin even wished that guy who wore his underwear on the outside called Superman was real, no matter how he would affect the world.

From the moment Yang Chen pulled her out of the bar by the hand, An Xin felt the abrupt feeling of happiness.

She practically had zero awareness as she followed Yang Chen to the car, and got into the front passenger seat. She was too lazy to even put on her seat belt, and immediately threw herself into Yang Chen's embrace and indolently held onto him. She then passionately kissed his cheeks and neck.

Yang Chen felt helpless towards An Xin who suddenly became overflowing with passion. He held An Xin's soft and flexible waist. His cupped right hand followed downwards to kneaded that outstandingly beautiful butt. Then he smacked it twice as it emitted the sounds *Bam Bam*.

An Xin released a soft moan, and her face turned red in an instant as if water would drip out. In the dark car, the succubus-like beauty that wasn't exhibited

before appeared. She was beautiful enough to shake him to the core.

According to Yang Chen's comprehension, this woman was actually very "stuffy(he basically means she hasn't had the D for a long time)."

"You belong to me, and not the other way around. Obediently stay in your seat and buckle up, don't delay what's important." Yang Chen ordered with a commanding tone.

An Xin was like an obedient little kitty, she reluctantly rubbed Yang Chen's chest for a while, then properly sat down in her seat.

Due to her tantalizing movements and seductive expression, Yang Chen impatiently started his car and drove off with a loud roar.

It was nearly midnight, and there were very few cars to be found on the roads. Yang Chen drove to his destination, the closest five star hotel to Bar Street, Jade Clouds Hotel passing by many red lights..

The Jade Clouds Group was also one of the veteran enterprises that was famous in Zhong Hai, they had many branches under them, and a great reputation. At the very least, even someone who returned to this country recently like Yang Chen knew about Jade Cloud Hotel's services and facilities being the best of the best amongst five-star hotels.

Actually, if this was just an ordinary one night stand, Yang Chen would be fine even with a motel, but this lady with him was obviously from a high-class family, the place chosen must fit her status.

After getting off the car, Yang Chen directly passed his keys to the hotel's valet, and let the valet park his car. Yang Chen pulled An Xin by the hand, and quickly walked to the reception to ask for a room.

Seeing Yang Chen so enthusiastic, An Xin couldn't help but let out a clear laugh, "There's no need to be in such a rush, right? It's not like I'm going to run away tonight."

Yang Chen grabbed hold of An Xin's tight waist, and kissed on her cheek, "You demoness, isn't this fire caused by you?"

The hotel's female receptionist saw how this pair of young rich-looking couple

spoke such vulgar words, and even she felt a little awkward, so she quickly went through the procedures and prepared a large room with a double bed for Yang Chen.

The two took the elevator straight up to the 23rd floor, the moment they got out of the elevator, An Xin pushed Yang Chen against the wall. She once again stuck her entire body to Yang Chen's, and wantonly kissed the man's lips.

"Damn....."

With a vague groan, Yang Chen opened his jaws and replied passionately. The two's tongues tangled with one another, mixing their saliva, like vines twined around each other. They held each other tightly while moving to their room's door.

Yang Chen didn't even take a look at the lock as the room card in his hand accurately stuck into the narrow slot, the lock's light turned green, and was immediately opened.

At this time, An Xin finally had difficulty breathing due to her mouth being clogged, her thin cherry lips were already slightly swollen, but that just made her seem more enchanting.

An Xin panted delicately while her vision turned blurry, "You nearly suffocated me by kissing."

"The more stifling part comes later." Yang Chen swung a back kick to close the door, and naughtily moved his hands to knead An Xin's sexy butt, "Do I have the pleasure of inviting Miss An Xin into the bath with me?"

"Please undress me, Mr. Yang....."

Yang Chen's hands moved so quickly that An Xin was a little dazed, after a short period of time, the two were already in the bathtub that was big enough to fit four people, enjoying the warm water.

Yang Chen's hands were covered in shower gel as he slid it on An Xin's jade-like skin. He didn't let a single inch of skin go. Her slightly flushed skin emitted a sexy charm under the bathroom's gentle lights.

"You're such a thoughtful man, you're more meticulous than me when I

shower.” When Yang Chen’s hands caressed some private parts, An Xin couldn’t help but to slightly tremble as she spoke.

Yang Chen evilly smiled, “As a qualified mate, Miss An Xin should provide me the same level of service.”

An Xin tenderly bit on Yang Chen’s shoulder, amorously glanced at him, then her exquisite little hand suddenly grabbed onto Yang Chen’s valiant part under the water.

Yang Chen felt An Xin’s hand tremble for a moment, while her pretty face looked slightly uncomfortable, but that look disappeared in a blink of an eye.

“Your asset is very robust.” An Xin began to gently service Yang Chen.

It had been a long time since he was serviced like this by a woman, even though he had Rose for the deed, in this aspect Rose was more conservative and too shy to do some things. At this moment, a beauty he just met looked at him with such a seductive charm, and offered him her tender hands. Yang Chen felt blood rushing to his head.

He lifted An Xin’s body from the water, grabbed a large towel, and quickly wiped their bodies. He didn’t care about An Xin’s dripping wet hair and stepped out of the bathroom.

In a rather wild manner he threw An Xin into the middle of the bed, her snow-white skin that had just been through a bath was dazzling. This beauty that didn’t have a single piece of clothing on smiled at him, she didn’t seem to be bothered by this boorish treatment at all.

With heavy breaths, Yang Chen pounced onto the soft, swan-like body, shared a passionate, nearly nipping kiss with her for a while, then directly stabbed his spear that was ready a long time ago into her.

Yang Chen was surprised to find that the beauty’s deep valley wasn’t like how he imagined it would be, soft and moist like a noblewoman, it was instead tight like a narrow road. After pushing in slightly, he felt a layer of weak obstruction.

Yang Chen’s mind sobered up over this, and he asked in shock, “You’re a virgin?”

An Xin's pretty face was covered in sweat, she seemed to be forcibly enduring the pain from her lower body, yet at this moment she revealed a wide smile, "So what if that's the case?"

As she said that, the woman took the initiative to stick her butt forward!

Watching her break that layer of obstruction herself, Yang Chen felt as if his soul nearly flew out of his body.

Right after An Xin's brave move, she was in so much pain that she softly wailed, her eyebrows knit together with a painful expression on her face. It was a sight that was incredibly pitiful.

"Are you alright....." Yang Chen felt a burst of bitterness in his heart, he truly didn't have that much experience in handling with virgins. He originally wanted to just find a pretty one night stand, but why was it that his two visits to that bar resulted in a virgin both times!?

God dammit! I'm not going to that shitty bar in the future!! Yang Chen hatefully thought.

It seemed as if An Xin saw through Yang Chen's hesitation as she pulled Yang Chen towards her from his back, she spoke in a dissatisfied manner, "If you're a man then start moving without a care, what I want is a brave knight, not a cowardly fleeing soldier! As a virgin I'm not even afraid, what are you afraid of!?"

"You will regret this!" With his pride of being a man provoked, Yang Chen who was forcibly enduring the pleasure unleashed it all, without caring about how this beauty had just torn her hymen, he wreaked havoc in her.

A little red came out of her.

In the end, the two who were soaked in sweat coiled around each other, with all that passion released, they slept in each other's embrace.

Early morning the next day, Yang Chen got up a bit dazed, while An Xin was already neatly dressed, she must've gotten up quite some time ago. As before, she wore a blue dress, looking elegant and bright. However, she looked more beautiful than last night, probably because of the bath that was good for her skin. She sat on the white sofa beside the bed, holding a glass of Bordeaux red wine that came with the room, she filled two glasses.

“Let’s toast for the night of fun we shared.” An Xin passed the glass to Yang Chen.

This woman looked upright and proper, as if she was a totally different person from the wild person last night, a typical ‘beautiful enough to show off, while good in the bed’.

Yang Chen received it with a smile. They gently clinked their glasses, and emptied it.

“Thank you, Mr. Yang.” An Xin suddenly showed a serious expression, and said in a slightly pained manner, “Yesterday’s affair may bring you quite a bit of trouble, but I think you should have received a decent amount of satisfaction from my body as well.”

These words sounded a little odd to Yang Chen, and he asked, “What do you mean? What trouble?”

An Xin apologetically smiled, “You’ll find out very soon.”

Right at this time, a *thump thump thump* knocking sound came from the door.

“Open the door!”

Yang Chen was stunned. *Is this a play or something?* He quickly thought of putting on his clothes, as he was still completely naked.

But the people coming evidently had more power than Yang Chen thought, as they didn’t even wait for Yang Chen to open the door. The door was opened from the outside, and several policemen with grave expressions charged in.

The few policemen piercing gaze swept over Yang Chen and An Xin, then the leading policeman brought out their search warrant.

“Police here to sweep pornography! Nobody is allowed to move!”

Ka Cha Ka Cha...

Following closely behind the police were several reporters with cameras, they rapidly tapped their shutter button.

Yang Chen had a blank expression as he sat on the bed topless, he didn’t have the time to care about whether he put on his underwear or not, he turned

totally silly.

Ka Cha!

They flashed in his face, and this scene was frozen in time.

Please be sure to be reading this on volaretranslations.com !!! Think about it! It's for you and for me and the entire human race. There are, people pirating, if you care enough about the translators... if you don't, then okay, ain't nuthin I can do bout that..

§

Chapter 90: Assets worth over a hundred million

Original and most up to date translations are posted at volaretranslations.com.

Please read at volaretranslations.com

Early this morning after being sent into the police station, Yang Chen felt that it was truly a bad sign, at the very least, because he wouldn't be able to buy breakfast for the ladies in the office, when he returns he would face a barrage of bullets.

Under the watchful eye of two policemen Yang Chen who wore a pair of handcuffs entered the West Region Police Department along with An Xin.

Please read at volaretranslations.com

Yang Chen looked at An Xin who refused to speak a word all this time, and couldn't help but to ask something he was puzzled over, "Is this a deliberate plot against me, or was I so lucky to jump into the line of fire?"

An Xin apologetically looked at Yang Chen. Things had gotten till this point, and they all knew what was going on.

Please be sure to be reading this at volaretranslations.com

"You just happened to jump into the line of fire....." An Xin softly replied.

It was definitely impossible for a well-known five star hotel like Jade Clouds Hotel to have policemen casually raiding to arrest prostitution. For Yang Chen to be caught red-handed after coming out to play once was obviously a part of An Xin's scheme.

A woman gave her first time to a stranger she had met in a bar. After she went to the hotel she even called the police to catch him red-handed. What's worse was, she didn't just call the police, she even called in reporters!

Yang Chen felt that if it wasn't An Xin who had gone mad, then the world had gone mad... he himself had gone mad, how lucky was he for a large 'metal pan' to fall from the skies and crash on his head like that!?

Sometimes being too liked by women isn't a good thing for a man. Yang Chen narcissistically thought.

Although he didn't know the specific reason as to why An Xin did this, Yang Chen wasn't too interested in knowing either. He just thought about how to deal with the incoming onslaught of problems.

"No whispering! Move quickly!" A policeman urged them on with a yell.

Yang Chen turned around and smiled, "Police comrade, thank you for your trouble, I shan't whisper anymore then, I shall speak loudly. However, I can't move quickly, if I ended up running away you guys would have to catch me again."

After seeing the policemen reveal pained expressions, An Xin who was originally in a terrible mood couldn't help but chuckle. *This man's reaction is truly strange, he knew that I am using him, I caused him to enter the police station, which might even ruin his reputation. Yet he's still able to joke with the policemen, if it isn't because he was broad-minded, then it might be because he is frighteningly shrewd.*

A familiar figure was already standing by an office desk when they entered the police station for an interrogation.

Cai Yan who wore the deep-green police uniform looked as graceful and valiant as ever. She crossed her arms in front of her chest, causing her pair of bulging mountains to seem extremely conspicuous. If it wasn't that for that face which could injure people with its chilliness, she would definitely be the best choice for a uniform cosplay adult movie.

"Police Chief Cai, we meet again." Yang Chen greeted with a forced smile, as the place they met was rather bad.

Cai Yan sneered, "You've made progress, the last time you entered the station by going against a syndicate. This time you got caught playing with a woman you met in a bar. I hope your wife is broad-minded enough to forgive you, if not, I don't mind disciplining you in her place."

Early in the morning when Cai Yan came to work, she received a report from her subordinate that they received a tip, stating that a man and woman were

having special relations in Jade Clouds Hotel. As the woman involved had a rather sensitive identity, this case was immediately reported to her, the Police Chief. But what she didn't expect was, other than this woman's background being special, the man involved was actually Yang Chen!? She originally didn't have a good impression of him, yet he was now her good sister Lin Ruoxi's husband. His wife was in the hospital, yet he was doing something like that behind her back. This caused Cai Yan to turn so angry that she nearly flipped the table! She was determined to get involved in this case personally.

Yang Chen didn't care much about the fierce words Cai Yan spoke, he smiled, looked towards An Xin and said, "This is Police Chief Cai, a good sister of my wife." He looked as if he was very intimate with her, like he was meeting an old friend.

An Xin was shocked, she didn't expect that the man she seduced was married! So this fella actually came out to be unfaithful, looks like he isn't a good man either... when she thought this way, An Xin's feeling of guilt decreased. Seeing Yang Chen still beaming at her and introducing this beautiful Police Chief, she felt that this man had a really thick skin, she forced a smile and said, "Hello, Police Chief Cai."

"Hmph." Cai Yan naturally wouldn't be polite to An Xin, women were always jealous or disliked other women who are of the same level of beauty as them, especially those rotten ones that give the impression of being a slut in their first meeting, "Miss An, you are also someone who has status, and born with great assets, yet you do despicable things like seducing a man who has a wife, becoming an adulterer, is there the law in your eyes!?"

An Xin didn't mind what was said, she instead showed an enchanting smile and said, "Which is why we were caught, and even photographed by the media. Humans aren't holy beings that never sin, if Police Chief Cai wants to interrogate, An Xin will definitely cooperate."

"You have no shame." Cai Yan snorted, "Don't think that just because your clan is supporting you, I will skimp on my work, what I want to know is the truth."

Yang Chen raised his hand and said, "The truth is very simple, we both drank

too much, our emotions welled up, then we lost control of ourselves, causing us to do something beyond our ordinary man-woman friendship.”

A young policeman who was recording the words spoken slapped the table, “Don’t speak nonsense! Prostitution is prostitution! Selling the flesh is selling the flesh! Speak the truth!”

Feeling vexed, Yang Chen sighed, and patiently explained, “Policeman bro, I wasn’t speaking nonsense. After I was done playing with this woman I didn’t pay, so this can’t be considered as prostitution, right? Even if she wanted to sell herself she didn’t successfully sell!”

“You!”

The other policemen present couldn’t help but laugh and even An Xin felt that he was too shameless. Her pretty face turned scarlet, and she rolled her eyes at Yang Chen. *What about money and sale, why didn’t I realize how shameless this man was last night? But... he’s pretty fun.*

Cai Yan noticed the abnormal mood, so she coughed, and the policemen in the room all obediently quietened down.

“Don’t flaunt your debating skills, you’re a rogue, and a gangster, we can’t win an argument with you, and don’t want to talk to you about these.” Cai Yan coldly glared at Yang Chen, and spoke with disdain, “However, today’s events are already known to the media, even if I don’t do a thing to the two of you, your family and friends probably won’t let this matter rest.”

An Xin rolled her hair with her finger in a relaxed manner, calm and composed, “Police Chief Cai, if there aren’t anymore superfluous questions, we can continue talking after I meet my lawyer.

“Your lawyers have already arrived.” Cai Yan forcefully held in her fury, and pointed at the two balding men who were walking in from the door.

One of the men seemed familiar to Yang Chen, it was precisely Lawyer Zhang who brought him out the first time he came to the police station. With his arrival, Yang Chen figured that Cai Yan had already reported this matter to Lin Ruoxi. As for the other man holding a briefcase, he reckoned that that was An Xin’s lawyer.

Seeing the lawyers enter, Cai Yan no longer had the free time to care about the two of them, and began negotiating with the lawyers, narrating the case in detail.

Utilizing this free time, Yang Chen asked An Xin, “Hey Miss An, can you explain the cause for all this? Although I didn’t shed my blood or lay down my life for you, I still spent assets worth of over a hundred million on you, you should at least tell me the reason you are playing me to death, right?”

Puzzled, An Xin pouted, “What assets worth over a hundred million? I remember that the charges for the room were even paid by me when we left the hotel, all you did was treat me to a cocktail, don’t exaggerate!”

“These words of yours are incorrect, how can filthy money compare with this hundreds of millions of mine..... my manly essence?”

Seeing Yang Chen’s nefarious smile, An Xin immediately understood what that so called “essence” was, she couldn’t help but ruthlessly pinch the flesh on Yang Chen’s waist, while blushing she said, “You still dare say! You tortured me for an entire night without putting on any contraceptives, if I get pregnant, I will carry the baby and knock on your door! We’ll see what your wife would do!”

“This... how else can this be settled? Accept! Both woman and child will be taken in!” Yang Chen said with an tyrannic expression.

An Xin pursed her lips and smiled, “Save it, once this matter is over, we will walk our separate ways. If you really want me to birth a child for you, wait till you have the capability to meet me again.”

“That can’t be, so heartless... wait, you haven’t told me why all these happened.” Yang Chen pursued.

An Xin hesitated for a while, then lowered her head in shame and said, “The reason I came back to the country this time is because my father is hurriedly trying to marry me off to a person I don’t like. I don’t want to get married to him, yet I wanted an easy way to dispel this idea of theirs, so.....”

“So you chose to give your body to a stranger, and using this as compensation, force the stranger to be one of the sacrifices for your plan, turn your reputation to absolute shit, and make the opposing party give up on marrying you.” Yang

Chen didn't know whether to laugh or to cry, why was he always encountering something like this? He rubbed his face, and with a hoarse laugh he said, "Luckily, you're a beauty with value, otherwise I would've made a huge loss."

An Xin initially thought that Yang Chen would fly into a rage when he heard about this absurd matter, but Yang Chen still maintained that happy expression, so she carefully asked, "Aren't you angry? I deceived you, and even brought so much trouble to you."

Yang Chen laughed out loud, "This isn't my first time entering the police station, and reputation can't bring me any food. What you did didn't truly make me lose anything I truly care about. I instead feel like I made a profit I didn't just taint a beautiful virgin, I don't even need to take any responsibility for it."

"Hmph, I could see that, your skin is unimaginably thick, that layer of mine was given away in a truly unjust manner." An Xin pretended to be angry as she brandished her little fist.

Without giving the two more time to chat, Cai Yan and the two lawyers walked over. Cai Yan was a little discouraged as she said, "The two of you may leave."

After all, both parties had big-name lawyers, while Cai Yan didn't have enough evidence either, so she could only release them.

Original and most up to date translations are posted at volaretranslations.com.

Please read at volaretranslations.com

But before they left, Cai Yan still sneered towards Yang Chen and said, "You can prepare to divorce Ruoxi, she knows everything."

Yang Chen rubbed his nose. *This marriage of mine simply didn't have any real feelings mixed in from the start, even if Lin Ruoxi knows about this, I reckon it'll just be like a passing cloud to her.*

Leaving the two lawyers to deal with some procedures, the man and woman who entered the police station only a short while ago walked out of the main entrance under the disdainful gaze of the policemen.

The moment they walked out to the car park outside, Yang Chen and An Xin noticed a pair of black S-Class Mercedes-Benz parked.

An Xin's complexion was a little unsightly as she bitterly laughed and said,

“They came really quickly.”

Original and most up to date translations are posted at [volaretranslations](http://volaretranslations.com).

Please read at volaretranslations.com

§

Chapter 91: Something like this

Since he knew the cause of all this, Yang Chen was able to guess from this scene, who the person An Xin mentioned was.

Out from the two Mercedes-Benz were first several men in black suits. Then an old man and a young man stepped out.

The older man looked to be of fifty years old or so, his mix of black and white hair were neatly combed back, on this healthy face there wasn't a trace of wrinkles, it seemed as though he took great care of himself, and there weren't many vestiges of age.

The young man wore a white suit and red tie, he looked like he was bursting with vitality, and had a sunshine-like smile. Since the moment he got out, he stayed a bit besides the older man from the back while giving off the impression of him being intimate yet respectful of his senior.

"That's your dad? He takes really good care of his health, it's even possible that he was more handsome than me in his youth, seems like your genes are indeed outstanding." Yang Chen pointed at the middle-aged man who walked over with an ashen expression.

An Xin saw not the slightest bit of panic on Yang Chen's face, and curiously asked, "Aren't you leaving? My dad would definitely feel like ripping you to shreds right now."

"Of course I'll leave, but your dad is already in front of my eyes, if I don't say hello it would mean that I'm fleeing. I don't like the word 'flee'."

Without waiting for An Xin to persuade him, Daddy An who had already walked forward called out, "You can't escape even if you wished to!"

"Dad, if you want to take revenge for this matter then come at me, this doesn't concern him." An Xin stood in front of Yang Chen, blocking him from her father, and calmly said, "I'm the one who seduced him, your daughter An Xin is now a loose woman. In addition, I will be on some gossip newspapers soon,

everybody would know that the daughter of the An Clan Group's Chairman, An Zaihuan, had seduced a stranger in a bar before marriage, and even spent the night in the hotel belonging to her fiancé's family."

Slap

A loud slap fell on An Xin's delicate cheeks,

"You damn child... you... you're trying to kill me with anger..." An Zaihuan widened his eyes, had a flushed face, and a shuddering tone. His right hand that he just used to slap her raised in mid-air once again, as though it would be swung anytime.

An Xin didn't try to dodge, she softly laughed without happiness or sorrow, gracefully tidied up her hair that turned into a mess and said, "If this isn't enough, you can hit a few more times, you're the one who brought me into this world after all, you have the right to hit me, I don't mind."

"You shouldn't have done this, you've never disappointed me once since you're a child, you've always been obedient... why....." An Zaihuan looked at his only daughter and asked with a grimaced expression.

An Xin looked straight at her father, then glanced at the expressionless man in a white suit beside him, and showed a grieved smile, "That's right, I've always listened to you since childhood, because you told me that I'm the hope that mom left in this world. When I was seven, you told me you wanted me to learn to play the piano, and in less than a year I championed a competition that involved the whole country. When I was nine, you had me learn ballet, then when I was thirteen, you sent me to Vienna, Austria to join the Russian dance troupe. Learning how to draw, learning flower arrangement, and learning everything that a child of nobility should. As long as you wanted me to do it, I would do it, and strive to do it the best I could. When you said you had difficulty choosing between Oxford and Cambridge, I neglected sleep and meals to obtain a Master's Degree at both universities... Since childhood, as long as you mentioned my mother who had left this world, and tell me not to let down her hopes for me, I would put my utmost effort in doing whatever..."

"However....." An Xin's eyes turned a little red and moist, the smile on her face was a little bitter as she said, "But my dead mother wouldn't force me to marry

someone I don't like! You're forcing me to marry him!"

An Xin pointed at the silent man in white suit, coldly smiled and said, "This person is just the relative of your lover. For your lover, you didn't give a damn about how I felt, and asked me to marry a complete stranger. To add onto that, a man I don't like. I am your daughter; that woman only spent two years with you, and you listen to whatever she says, completely forgetting everything that I've done... are you going to tell me that this is also for my dead mother!?"

"Enough!!!"

An Zaihuan yelled, and immediately followed with severe coughs, he had a finger pointed at An Xin, yet couldn't get a word out.

The man in a white suit by his side revealed a slightly nervous look, creased his brows and said, "Don't be agitated, Uncle An, An Xin is just taking things too hard, she's young and youngsters always have a rebellious period, it's normal to err, let me persuade her."

An Zaihuan heard the man's words, displayed a gratified expression, and nodded with difficulty, "Liu Yun, it's my An Family that let you down, this unfilial child An Xin let you down..."

"I didn't let him down, I've never promised to give him anything, to sleep with another man is my freedom." An Xin sternly replied.

Liu Yun didn't take offense to that. He placated An Zaihuan, then said to An Xin, "An Xin, don't be so willful, when this happened to you, Uncle and Aunt were both truly worried, please come home with us."

"This is my family's matter, what does it have to do with you?" An Xin turned her head away, ignoring Liu Yun.

Liu Yun still wasn't angered, and urged with a warm smile, "Alright alright, this is your family's matter, but even as a friend, I hope you father and daughter could sit at the same table and talk it over. An Xin, I know that you're dissatisfied with marrying me, we've only known each other for a short period of time, but my feelings for you are genuine and sincere. Ever since the first time I saw you, I could never forget you. Please give me time, after we get married, I will let you know that choosing me was the right choice."

“Are you crazy!? You still want to marry me!?” An Xin was in disbelief as she looked at Liu Yun, “You want to marry a loose woman, taking someone others view as a slut to be your wife? Jade Clouds Corporation’s young Chairman Liu, are you having a fever?”

When Yang Chen heard of this, he couldn’t help but be astounded, this young man Liu Yun was actually Jade Clouds Corporation’s Young Master. An Xin this little demoness was truly evil, she didn’t just ruin her own reputation, she even wanted to toss a blow at her fiancé’s family, choosing to do something like that in their family’s property. He reckoned that even if he didn’t take the initiative to bring her to Jade Clouds Hotel, she would bring it up herself.

At this moment, Liu Yun shook his head, “I’m sincere, and I’m saying these words to you seriously.”

An Zaihuan was moved, he initially thought that this marriage would be turned into smoke after a matter like this, he never expected Liu Yun to be this magnanimous, and immediately said, “Liu Yun, you’re really a good child, this brat An Xin doesn’t know what’s good for her, and did such an unfilial and utterly filthy thing, yet you’re willing to let this go and marry her. Sure enough, I didn’t make a mistake at choosing you. An Xin! Quickly apologize to Liu Yun!”

An Xin sneered, and turned her head away.

“You.....” An Zaihuan was immediately angered again, “Are you trying to anger me to death!”

Right at this time, Yang Chen who had been ignored couldn’t help but ask, “Erm... if there’s nothing else you guys need me for, then I’m going to leave, I’m already late for work today, and can’t delay any longer.”

Only then did the few of them remember that the male protagonist of this crime was still here.

Towards the stranger Yang Chen who did a “traitorous affair” with his daughter, An Zaihuan naturally didn’t look at Yang Chen with kindness, but his anger turned into smiles as she said, “You want to run? You think that after seducing my daughter and after causing her to make such a big mistake, you could still leave with totally unharmed?”

“Then what do you have in mind, Uncle?” Yang Chen forced a smile, “These things have already happened, I can’t possibly turn your daughter back into a virgin, right?”

“You... you bastard!” An Zaihuan didn’t expect Yang Chen to have absolutely no fear, with an expression like all these were a matter of course.

Liu Yun’s expression changed for a moment, then he warmly said to Yang Chen, “May I have your name, Mister?”

“I’m Yang Chen, if Mr. Liu is unhappy that I snatched away your fiancée’s first time, you can say it, and even scold me, yep... I understand, as a man, nobody would like it when their woman is snatched away, even though she hasn’t become your woman yet.” Yang Chen rubbed his head, and was at a loss as to what he should do, this matter was simply a complete mess.

Liu Yun maintained a smile as he said, “Mr. Yang is an understanding person, but I never thought of taking revenge against Mr. Yang, I hope that this matter could be peacefully settled. An Xin is my fiancée and I love her, this mishap she had was because I didn’t take good care of her, I can’t pass the blame to others. If Mr. Yang doesn’t mind, we can actually peacefully settle this matter. As long as Mr. Yang keeps a tight lip regarding this matter, and deny that this matter ever happened if someone asks, that will be enough.”

“Deny? The reporters had already come, what good would denying do?” Yang Chen replied.

Liu Yun confidently smiled, “Mr. Yang probably doesn’t know this, the media companies under my Jade Clouds Corporation are rather powerful. The material that those of the media obtained have basically all been contained, so Mr. Yang does not need to worry, for there won’t be any news or images being circulated that will negatively impact you. All we need to do is deny that this matter ever happened, in that way, both An Xin and you, Mr. Yang wouldn’t have any future troubles.”

Yang Chen understood what he meant, Jade Clouds Corporation’s young chairman sure enough had the ability, to even be able to control the flow of information on Zhong Hai’s media outlets.

An Zaihuan happily clapped, “Nephew Liu Yun, you’re truly great, the Liu

Family indeed can't be compared with us ordinary families. If this is the case, then I'm relieved, look at this silly brat, after doing something like this that ruins her reputation, even if she does marry into the Liu Family, she would still be met with disdain!"

"Don't worry, Uncle. If anyone dares speak of An Xin maliciously, I, Liu Yun would definitely spare no effort to protect An Xin from any harm." Said Liu Yun, his eyes that were rich in love once again looked towards An Xin.

An Xin was finally emotionally moved, but it wasn't because of Liu Yun's eyes that were full of fiery love, it was instead because Liu Yun's methods caught her off guard. If the plan of utilizing the media to ruin her reputation fails, then she would still have no other choice but to marry into the Liu Family.

Now, her only hope was for Yang Chen to choose not to deny this matter, and honestly say what happened that night, that way, the materials that had been contained wouldn't be of much use anyway, because the words of someone involved possesses the most persuasiveness!

However, if Yang Chen speaks the truth, that would mean that he would have to bear the bad name of being a traitorous husband, which would adversely affect his reputation.....

Given a choice, who would be so senseless as to bear a horrid reputation and be shunned upon!?

An Xin's face turned pale, and she turned to look at Yang Chen who remained silent. This was the man who took away her chastity which she protected for over twenty years, would he still be the way he was yesterday, be her brave knight, and save her from this perilous situation?

It was unbeknownst to them when Yang Chen took out a cigarette from his pocket and lit it up, he creased his brows and blew out smoke, looking like an old farmer that was from a different world from Liu Yun who looked like a successful person.

Liu Yun had a confident smile, prideful yet warm, as if this was the natural state of this handsome young man. Seeing how Yang Chen remained silent as if he was considering something, he didn't become anxious, "Does Mr. Yang feel that this is hard to do? If Mr. Yang doesn't mind this Liu being meddlesome, this

Liu is willing to pay a certain amount as compensation to Mr. Yang. As long as Mr. Yang keeps a tight lip, and protect both yours and my fiancée’s reputation, that would be enough.....”

“No need.” Yang Chen waved his hand while blowing out smoke, his brows were creased as he looked at the fidgety An Xin, then smiled at Liu Yun who gave the impression of being in control of everything and said, “As a person, I don’t consider myself great, and don’t consider myself a coward. However... to say that nothing happened after doing a woman, I can’t do it.”

§

Chapter 92: They may all get lost

When Yang Chen said that, it was as if everybody in the scene froze over with interesting expressions.

Liu Yun and An Zaihuan both began to suspect that they heard wrongly. Immediately after, An Zaihuan was once again bubbling with anger, while Liu Yun squinted his eyes, like he couldn't understand what was going on in this man's mind.

An Xin was the most excited, crying tears of joy. Her sparkling tears rolled out of her eyes!

He is truly my knight! The knight that would charge through, regardless of everything for me!

Damn their reputation! Damn their money! Damn their tight-lips!

If I did it then I did it! There's nothing that mustn't be said, nothing that can't be said!

This man who smoked pungent tobacco that's of poor quality, who looks average, who I haven't known for a day, who I used for my absurd plan, used his reputation to protect my tottering dignity!

"Yang Chen I love you to death!"

Because she instantly returned to heaven from hell, An Xin joyously jumped into Yang Chen's embrace, her arms hooked onto Yang Chen's neck. Without caring about how Yang Chen smelled of smoke, she firmly kissed Yang Chen's lips.

Even if there is my father, fiancée, and bodyguards watching, so what!?

They can all get lost! I'm kissing this man!

Yang Chen was a little shy. *Girls these days are too innocent, my old hoodlum roguish style is seen as dashing to her, and she even took the initiative to to kiss... yep, although it doesn't feel as good as smoking, once the fact that we're*

kissing in front of her father and fiancé factored in, this feeling of superiority is actually pretty good.

Especially a young and rich man like Liu Yun, who puts on even more airs than me, but in the end, didn't your woman still leap into my embrace?

"Wuwu....." Yang Chen vaguely said, "An Xin... don't bite my tongue....."

An Xin couldn't control herself, and left many hickies along Yang Chen's mouth, face, and even neck.

An Zaihuan who was already angered to the point of fainting saw how affectionate his daughter was to this wild man, and nearly puked blood from the anger. He trembled and clenched his teeth as he watched, yet he wasn't able to curse out, and panted.

Liu Yun's face was incredibly gloomy, but he still wasn't angered. He calmed An Zaihuan down, so as to avoid injuring the body, after placating him for a while, he gracefully turned back and unflinchingly said, "Mr. Yang, it looks like you aren't willing to cooperate."

Yang Chen laughed and said, "Well... it isn't that I'm unwilling to cooperate, but as a person I don't have the habit of staring straight at someone and lying, especially when it comes to a serious matter like this. A person needs a good reputation, but also needs to have an understanding of shame and honor. A lady's chastity cannot be made into nothing. I believe that if Great Young Master Liu truly likes An Xin, he would understand this principle."

"If I don't truly love her, I wouldn't put in so much effort to cover this up for her."

Yang Chen shook his head, and revealed a serious expression for once, "What do you want to conceal? What you're concealing isn't just her purity, it's also her dignity. If you truly love her, you should love everything about her, even if she slept with a hundred, a thousand or ten thousand men, you should still calmly accept her, and not put in all your effort to concealing the facts. Unless... what you love is just the outer shell, and not everything else there is to An Xin other than her body."

"Mr. Yang, take back your preposterous speech, do not doubt my sincerity

towards my fiancée.” Liu Yun face turned unsightly.

An Xin, on the other hand had difficulty concealing how touched she was, she had just wiped away her tears, and was about to cry her eyes out again. She slapped Yang Chen’s chest to complain, “Annoying, you keep saying words that would make me cry, are you trying to bed me again?”

“About that, it wouldn’t be good to do it in broad daylight, right?” Yang Chen awkwardly laughed, he was just being honest.

Seeing the two of them flirting as if there was no one else around, no matter how much self-control Liu Yun had, it still wasn’t enough. He squinted his eyes and said, “Mr. Yang, please watch your conduct. An Xin is still my fiancée, I will not change my decision when it comes to this marriage! If you wish to witness the scene of us getting married unscathed, then you better stop sticking onto my fiancée!”

After hearing these words which contained a tint of threat, Yang Chen instinctively got into a bad mood. He sneered and said, “How I treat my darling is my freedom, as for whether or not I can witness the scene of your marriage with An Xin, you’d still have to ask An Xin whether she’s willing to marry you. I believe this problem is still worth discussing.”

An Zaihuan slowly breathed out, he was already in a towering rage as he loudly reprimanded, “You bastard! Did you eat the heart of a dragon? Who the hell do you think you are!? You think that we truly can’t touch you just because this stinking brat is protecting you!? As long as I, An Zaihuan, still have a single breath remaining, I definitely wouldn’t let a bastard like you who is lower than low have a peaceful life! Do you believe that I can have my people beat you up right now!?”

“You’re not allowed to harm him!” An Xin noticed that her father genuinely intended to make a move, and quickly spread her arms to protect Yang Chen. Her heart was very touched and full of guilt and towards Yang Chen, how could she care about anything else!?

Yang Chen sneered, as if he heard the greatest joke in the world, he gently yet irresistibly pulled An Xin behind him, took a few steps forward, and said to An Zaihuan and Liu Yun, “I’ve been rather poor recently, and can’t compare to you

guys in riches. I don't have as many subordinates as you, and the car I drive isn't as expensive as yours... however, that doesn't mean that I'll let you guys bully me. Also, I don't have the habit of using a woman as my windshield. Face is acquired by one's two hands, and not by one's mouth."

When he spoke till this point, Yang Chen's expression was frighteningly gloomy, his penetrating gaze made An Zaihuan and Liu Yun feel a little uncomfortable.

"Old man, let me tell you, I hate being threatened the most. I, Yang Chen, stand before you today, with a pair of arms, a pair of legs, I also have much thicker skin than you guys. I banged your daughter, and I didn't just bang her once or twice, I did her over ten times in a single night, are you as competent as me? I already did it, and had a great time doing it! Your daughter also had a great time! Perhaps in days I would have your daughter give birth to a son for me! What can do you about it!? What do you want to do about it!?"

"You... you... I..." Hearing such flagrantly foul language, An Zaihuan's eyes directly rolled back, he was so angry that he didn't get to say a thing and fainted over.

Several bodyguards were flustered as they supported him and brought him back into the car.

Hearing Yang Chen's tyrannical words, An Xin's cheeks were flushed. She herself was astonished by the fact that she didn't get angry over those words, and instead felt sweetness inside. She looked at Yang Chen's figure from the back, which wasn't tall or broad, yet felt a firm and steady mountain-like feeling of security from him.

However, Liu Yun was agitated to the limit, there had never been a person who blatantly provoked him like this. He sneered and said, "Mr. Yang, you will regret your rude actions today."

"Regret your sister!"

At the same time Yang Chen said that, his body suddenly charged forward. Like a snake, his hand abruptly grabbed onto Liu Yun's neck!

"Young Master!"

The bodyguards simply didn't have any time to react before Yang Chen had already grabbed hold of Liu Yun's neck, the most deadly point to hold onto!

"Release our Young Master!" Several bodyguards angrily shouted, but didn't dare to rashly make a move. This is because they felt vigorous rage from Yang Chen's eyes, and also... killing intent!

Liu Yun saw that he was taken hostage, and tried punching and kicking Yang Chen to release himself, but how could that little bit of strength he obtained from physical exercise be compared with Yang Chen's? His punches and kicks landed on Yang Chen's body, but it was like he was tickling him and had no effect whatsoever.

Yang Chen sneered, put in a little more strength and strangled Liu Yun, then lifted Liu Yun's body which weighed over a hundred pounds with a single arm, raising him in mid-air. It seemed as easy as lifting a rag doll.

"You... quickly let go of our Young Master!"

The bodyguards panicked, but didn't dare underestimate this man's strength, if he used a little more force, he might break Liu Yun's neck. After all, someone with nothing isn't afraid of doing anything, none of them could bear the consequences if anything happened.

Liu Yun was practically unable to breathe, his face was flushed, and he struggled for his life, but no matter what he tried to do he couldn't break free from Yang Chen's steel-like arm.

Yang Chen indifferently said, "I spoke nicely to you guys, if you want to get angry, then that's fine, you wanted to scold me, and I let you scold me, for I'm magnanimous that way, but threatening me is wrong....." After he said this, he turned to An Xin who was petrified and asked, "Darling An Xin, should I strangle him to death?"

An Xin quivered all over, then understood what was going on in front of her eyes, while she was still stunned by Yang Chen's godly speed and great strength, she hastily yelled, "No! Don't kill, Yang Chen quickly let go of him!"

"Since darling An Xin asked for it, I'll let you go." Said Yang Chen as he released Liu Yun's neck.

Liu Yun coughed severely as he fell onto the ground, his whole face was deep red, with dread he fell back to his bodyguards as he panted heavily.

“Your life is saved by An Xin, so you better not make things difficult for her, otherwise I won’t let go of your neck this easily the next time. If there’s nothing else, I’m leaving.”

After saying that, Yang Chen winked at An Xin, then turned to leave.

Liu Yun and the bodyguards expression changed, but in the end they didn’t have the courage to obstruct him.

On the contrary, An Xin couldn’t bear him leaving, but she knew that this wasn’t the time to cling onto Yang Chen. Furthermore, things had progressed to this stage, Yang Chen had already done too much for her, she had to face all of these herself next. Like Yang Chen said, she had her own dignity!

Feeling grateful to Yang Chen from the bottom of her heart, An Xin saw him off, tidied her appearance, then walked towards the Mercedes Benz.

“An Xin, where are you going?” Liu Yun asked in a deep voice, he wasn’t going to let this woman out of his sight again.

An Xin smiled, she simply couldn’t care less about him, “Where else could I go? I’m going home.” After she said that, she got into the car.

Many complicated emotions appeared on Liu Yun’s gloomy face for a moment, in the end, he murmured to himself, “What’s mine, nobody can take away.....”

Chapter 93: Failure of a man

Since it was a work day, Yang Chen directly drove to Yu Lei International after leaving the police station. Although he failed to do his job of buying breakfast, as an outstanding employee who loved his job, Yang Chen felt that he still had to persist in playing computer games till it was time to get off work.

The moment he entered the Public Relations office, countless grudgeful and discontented eyes shot over, giving Yang Chen goosebumps.

“Good morning beauties.” Yang Chen stiffly smiled and greeted. He stood by the door like a machine lacking lubricant.

“Hmph, someone ignored the lives of so many sisters, leaving us to starve since early in the morning.” Zhang Cai pouted her red lips, and grumbled in a dissatisfied manner.

Yang Chen was afraid that these women would take turns bombarding him, so he quickly said, “I can explain this, I met some trouble today.”

“What trouble?” A pretty girl doubtfully asked.

Yang Chen had always been honest, so he directly opened his mouth and said, “Yesterday I seduced a girl in a bar, spent the night in the hotel with her and ended up getting caught by the police. I got out of the police station a little late in the morning, and haven’t eaten breakfast either.”

The many PR ladies had black lines over their foreheads. *To fabricate a lie like that, who’s going to believe that!?*

Several ladies teased, “Such boasting, you have the lecherous heart but not the guts, how can you seduce a girl to bed you? It can’t be a dinosaur, right?”

“Isn’t it just forgetting to buy breakfast along with coming in late? We know you are famous for not putting any effort into work, we can forgive you, but you don’t need to fabricate such a crappy lie, right?”

“Big brother Yang, how about you seduce me, see if I’d go open a room with you, and let the police catch you again! I still haven’t been in a police station

yet!”

“Sly fox, if you want to enter the police station why not just go sell yourself in a bar! Haha.....”

The women chattered, and Yang Chen was stunned that no one believed him.

Yang Chen felt depressed. He spoke the truth and no one trusted him, what kind of world is this!?

This little crisis ended just like that. When Yang Chen went to his seat, Zhao Hongyan who was in the middle of typing glanced at him with a smile that wasn't a smile, “Were you really caught and sent to the police station?”

“Why would I come out with a lie with such contents? I even quarrelled a little with the woman's family.”

Zhao Hongyan revealed an expression of admiration, “You're pretty unlucky, just one night of cheating and you're caught by the police, I've never seen such a failure of a man like you.

“Heh, you think cheating is easy?” Yang Chen was discontent, “How about you try cheating too, just don't get caught by your husband.”

Zhao Hongyan's face blushed, and she playfully rolled her eyes at Yang Chen, “What nonsense are you spouting, I'm a woman from a good family, the kind that would devote her whole life striving for the family's happiness.”

“I don't know who it was the last time that started to get wet after being touched by me.” Yang Chen murmured.

How could Zhao Hongyan endure such ambiguous incitement? She raised her hand and hit Yang Chen's shoulder several times, and said with her face flushed, “You're not allowed to mention that! You're not allowed to do something like that either! I am treating you as an ordinary colleague, and I don't have dirty thoughts like you do.”

“What filthy thoughts.....” Yang Chen mockingly gazed at the shy married lady in front of him, “What you're doing is revealing exactly what you're trying to hide, I haven't said a thing about that, what are you imagining?”

Zhao Hongyan was so angry that her well developed chest repeatedly heaved,

then she snorted and turned away, ignoring Yang Chen.

At this moment, Liu Mingyu who wore a white suit walked over while swaying sexily. These days, she no longer needed to deal with the harassment from Department Head Ma, the Public Relations' number one had a much better mood. She looked vibrant, and her pretty face was like a blooming tulip.

Liu Mingyu carried a piping-hot cup of coffee in her hand, and leaned against Yang Chen's office table; because it was squeezed, her well developed butt curves became extremely exaggerated, the snug skirt drew the outline of her perfectly round contours.

"Yang Chen, you shouldn't tease Hongyan anymore, she's really worried about you. When she saw that you hadn't come to work this morning, she even wanted to give you a call to find out what happened to you, but who could've known that your phone was shut off."

With her thoughts exposed, Zhao Hongyan appeared defensive, "Sis Mingyan, what on earth are you saying! As if I'd be worried about this heartless fella! Come or don't come, he can do whatever he wants!"

Yet Yang Chen felt warmth, it seemed that these ladies truly cared about him, so he said to Zhao Hongyan with a smile, "What are you embarrassed for? There is nothing wrong with caring about your colleague."

"Who cares about you, don't be so narcissistic..." Zhao Hongyan pretended to be angry as she glared at him, then turned away to do something else.

Yang Chen then turned to look at Liu Mingyu who was silent, and asked, "What about you, were you worried about me?"

"Me?" Suddenly being asked such a question, Liu Mingyu's expression was a little unnatural, "What does this have to do with me, with your rogue style, it's always someone else who suffers losses, how can anything happen to you?" After she said that, Liu Mingyu walked back to her booth with quick steps.

You are all so good at pretending. Yang Chen smiled while shaking his head, then turned on his computer to begin his gaming life.

As usual, lunch was held at Yu Lei International's staff canteen, and it was as usual with the three women. After giving some of their food to Yang Chen, they

basically watched Yang Chen wolf it down, and didn't eat much themselves. Most of the time they chatted over cosmetics and fashion problems, women always have things they could chat about to no end, especially women who worked in the fashion industry.

At this time, Zhang Cai suddenly threw a question, "Geez, the Autumn Fashion Show is coming soon, do you guys think our CEO will be discharged and host it when it comes?"

"It should be fine." Zhao Hongyan pondered, "It's nearly half a month away, isn't the CEO going through recuperation? It should be ending soon."

"If the CEO isn't here when the time comes, this year's fashion show would definitely lack many heavyweights." Liu Mingyu said with concern, she then turned to look at Yang Chen who was still engrossed in devouring the food, "Yang Chen, whether it's good or bad, you're still an employee of the company, can't you care a little about what's going on in the company?"

What would my concern even do? Yang Chen secretly thought, and licked away the grains of rice at the corner of his mouth. With a smile he said, "It's not like I'm a doctor, even if I care about Boss Lin I can't help her discharge early."

"Heartless." Zhang Cai cutely stuck out her tongue, "Your wife is really pitiful to have a husband like you."

"Yeah, you married to your wife yet you're still fooling around in bars, as a result you even got caught by the police. You don't put in effort at work either, I really don't understand how there is a woman silly enough to marry you." Zhao Hongyan mocked.

Yang Chen indifferently smiled, he knew that they were joking, otherwise they wouldn't be eating with him. But he thought in his heart that next week was indeed time for Lin Ruoxi to be discharged, and there were many matters he should discuss with her.

To recount, I, her 'husband' was caught by the police for having an affair outside, yet my 'wife' Lin Ruoxi didn't even send me a message and just sent her lawyer to bring me out of the police station. To be able to be so indifferent towards her husband's extramarital affair, amongst the women in this world, this girl from the Lin Family could be considered to be a weirdo.

I'm too lazy to think about these things. Yang Chen shook his head and planned to continue eating, but from the corner of his eyes he noticed his lady superior Mo Qianni, who he hadn't seen for days enter the canteen. By her side was Lin Ruoxi's secretary Wu Yue. Following behind the two ladies were a bunch of men and women who looked like elites just from a glance.

Mo Qianni wore a fashionable slightly translucent shirt, a black vest, a coffee-colored flared trousers that was a throwback, and a pair of cowboy-style boots. Her graceful figure received an unruly sense of beauty from the clothes, yet didn't lack any charm. The moment she entered the canteen, quite a number of male employees were secretly staring at her.

However, there was exhaustion on Mo Qianni's bright and beautiful face. Her brows seemed stiff as she chatted with Wu Yue, as if she had problems she couldn't solve.

"Department Head Mo has been really pitiful recently, she's busy with the PR department's matters yet she still needs to take responsibility for the CEO's work." Zhang Cai softly said, "Having meetings every day, and coming down for lunch only when we're just about done."

"What other way is there? Boss Lin trusts Department Head Mo the most. Moreover, more work is always given to those capable, and Department Head Mo in the past few years increased the profits in the PR Department by multifold. I reckon that when Boss Lin returns, Department Head Mo would definitely receive a promotion, the bunch at the board of directors are already convinced by her ability." Zhao Hongyan said with admiration.

When the two married women said these, they abruptly turned to look at Liu Mingyu who remained silent with a tranquil smile.

Liu Mingyu looked at the two oddly, "What are you guys staring at me like that for?"

Zhang Cai chuckled, "Sis Mingyu, once Department Head Ma receives a promotion and becomes the vice-chairman, CEO's assistant or whatever position, the prime candidate for our next PR Department Head would be you, right?"

"What are you drivelling on for!" Liu Mingyu stretched her arm to pinch Zhang

Cai's soft cheek, and said with a smile, "Such a thing cannot be randomly said."

"But it's true." Zhao Hongyan approved of Zhang Cai's opinion, "Sis Mingyu's performance has been number one in our department for the last few years, they can't possibly let an outsider be the Department Head, can they? Us sisters all support you, Sis Mingyu!"

Seeing Liu Mingyu's happy and bashful look, Yang Chen couldn't help but say, "You guys make it sound like you're members of the board of directors, as if it'd be whoever just because you say it."

"Shut up! Eat!" The three women spoke in unison.

"How can I eat with my mouth shut....." Mumbled Yang Chen, and he no longer bothered to say anymore.

Right at this time, Mo Qianni who just walked past the four suddenly had her phone vibrate. After she picked up the phone, her expression slightly changed, she simply made some "mm" agreeing sounds then ended the call, left some words for Wu Yue and the others, then prepared to leave.

When she turned, she just happened to notice Yang Chen who was in the middle of raking in food. Mo Qianni hesitated for a moment, then walked to Yang Chen's side and said, "Yang Chen, come with me somewhere to settle a small matter."

"Ah? But I'm in the middle of my meal."

"It doesn't matter as long as you don't starve to death, this is an order!" Mo Qianni glared at him, this fella still had such an indolent appearance, she felt angry just by looking at him.

Yang Chen felt helpless, if she was just his superior he wouldn't really care, but they were friends in private after all, so it wasn't good if he rejected her. He stood up very slowly, "Alright then, but if I'm hungry later you'd have to treat me to a meal."

Please be sure to be reading this only at volaretranslations.com

Chapter 94: Quickly give it to me

Everytime he goes out with Mo Qianni, it would be to some weird place.

The first time was to a hoodlum company, the second was a roadside stall with spicy food. This time was the third, and Yang Chen was mentally prepared, but when they arrived at their destination, he was still stunned.

“Zhong Nan Engineering Construction Corporation” It was a company, but the place that they were at wasn’t where the company itself was located, it was instead a construction site handled by that company.

The brown steel beams, ash gray cement, and various types of rock fragments were at the side. The air was dusty, causing the area to look hazy under the sunlight.

The surroundings were filled with construction workers wearing yellow helmets; many of them were working topless, exposing their bronze muscles. Their thick sweat also made their trousers wet, and their faces were all muddy and dusty. You would think that they were crying when they smiled at you.

People often say that the city is built on the peasants’ sweat, but why don’t they say that the skyscrapers are built on the construction workers’ sweat?

“Erm, Miss Mo, are you sure we’re at the right place?” Yang Chen looked at Mo Qianni who was in a beautiful attire carefully walking on the bumpy road, and doubted her heels would last much longer.

Mo Qianni rubbed away the sweat on her forehead, and unhappily said, “I asked you to follow me, don’t speak rubbish!”

Yang Chen leisurely smiled, he didn’t take those words to heart.

Mo Qianni ignored him, and continued to walk forward. She approached a middle-aged foreman wearing a blue Zhong Nan Corporation uniform who was directing the workers to transport the cement.

“Hello sir, may I ask where the office for this construction site is?” Mo Qianni politely asked.

The foreman looked at her astonished, he was puzzled as to why such a pretty girl would come to this filthy construction site, and even look for their office. He guessed that she was an employee of one of the government's departments, so he welcomed her with a smile and straightforwardly told Mo Qianni where their office was located.

The so called 'office' was a temporary shelter, but a large construction company like this naturally had decent facilities. Other than it being a little empty inside, it wasn't much different from a real office, there was air conditioning and a TV.

There was only a single large wooden table in the office, a fat middle-aged man who wore the gray suit of an inferior brand was currently in the middle of an argument on the phone in a different dialect. When he noticed Mo Qianni and Yang Chen enter, he was first startled by Mo Qianni's good figure, then looked at the two like he just thought of something.

He quickly put down the phone. Afterwards, the fat man revealed what seemed to be a candid smile, went up to Mo Qianni and stretched out his hand, "May I know what you need help with, Miss?"

Mo Qianni ignored the man's hand in a natural manner, and indifferently said, "Where's Zhang Fugui? I'm here to pick him up."

The fatty didn't get a handshake, but didn't feel awkward by it, when he heard the name "Zhang Fugui" he squinted his eyes, to the point it was almost invisible, "You are Zhang Fugui's daughter?"

Mo Qianni creased her eyebrows, but still nodded, "Yes."

Yang Chen who stood behind looked at this scene with curiosity, he never thought that Mo Qianni's father would be here, and it seemed as if something bad had happened. He remembered that a while ago, Mo Qianni said to him that her father was dead, which meant that this Zhang Fugui was likely her stepfather.

Yang Chen didn't breathe a word, and quietly watched. He leisurely lit up his cigarette and smoked in silence.

"Did you bring the money?" It was as if the fatty changed faces, as he now

looked at Mo Qianni haughtily, as if he became superior to her in an instant.

Mo Qianni taciturnly reached into her small handbag and took out a bunch of red notes, it was obviously no small amount with a glance, and she said, "This is five thousand Huaxia dollars, release him."

"Five thousand?" The fatty laughed out loud, "Five thousand was the amount earlier, from the time your gambling addict of a father called you till now, quite some time has passed, and it's now more than five thousand!"

"What!?" Mo Qianni's expression turned ugly. She forcibly resisted her anger and asked, "He lost again!?"

The fatty snorted several times, held a long cigarette in his mouth, and pointed at the room next door, "You should go in to take a look yourself, and see how much he lost."

Mo Qianni turned and left the office like the wind, walked to the neighboring room, and fiercely opened the door.

A pungent scent of smoke and alcohol came out from the room, Mo Qianni immediately choked and coughed twice from this disgusting smell. She now was able to see the state of the room.

There was only several tables and benches in this room. On the table were messy poker cards, pai gow, and mahjong tiles. The cement floor was covered with cigarette butts and empty beer bottles. Two swaying incandescent light bulbs illuminated the room with a faint light.

At this moment, there were eight men in leisure clothing surrounding the largest table in the room, and there were two men, one at each end of the table.

A long faced man wore an unbuttoned white shirt, with combed up hair and a cigarette in his mouth and rested one leg on the bench, looking very relaxed.

On his opposite side, the other figure was trembling, he wore a yellow short-sleeved shirt, with a dejected expression. The corners of his eyes and his forehead had many wrinkles, while his face was so skinny that his cheeks looked as if they were protruding.

The people in the room noticed the door was being opened and turned to look

over. When they realized the one opening the door was a lovely lady, their eyes were all shining.

Only the scrawny middle-aged man with dispirited eyes revealed incredible happiness when he saw Mo Qianni, as if he was being pulled out of the mud and into the clouds. He immediately rushed towards her, and grabbed her shoulders with force, “Ni-zi! Quickly give me money! Quickly give me money! I want to stage a comeback!! Quickly give it to me!!!”

Mo Qianni felt pain from having her shoulders grabbed, but didn’t struggle free of it. With red eyes, she said with a grieved smile, “How much money do you want?”

“Give me everything you have! I want to stage a comeback!!” The man yelled, as if he had injected stimulants into him.

At this moment the other men all understood what was going on, the man with combed up hair maliciously smiled and said, “Little girl, you should be Zhang Fugui’s so-called daughter. Your father Zhang Fugui still owes me, Dajun a twenty thousand gambling debt, you should pay up for him before letting him gamble with me again.”

Zhang Fugui’s face flushed in anger, he turned back and shouted, “Don’t be complacent, Dajun! I will gamble with you again after I take the money! When the time comes you’ll owe me twenty thousand!”

“Twenty thousand……” Mo Qianni’s face turned pale, she looked at the deranged Zhang Fugui from the back and said, “In a mere half an hour, your losses turned from five thousand to twenty thousand? Do you know what you’re doing!?”

“I……” Zhang Fugui turned back, and saw that Mo Qianni was already misty-eyed. He finally realized that something was off, so he clenched his teeth to muster up his courage and said, “I slipped up for a moment earlier, don’t worry about this, Ni-zi, I will swiftly win it all back!”

“Slipped up for a moment? Has the time you spent slipping up been short? How many years has it been? How much money have I given to you?! Do you know that all that money would be enough to buy a flat in Zhong Hai!?” Mo Qianni finally couldn’t resist lashing out at him.

Zhang Fugui wanted to get angry, but thinking about how he had no money, and still needed to rely on his nominal daughter, he could appear meek and subservient with a smile, “Ni-zi, you can’t say such a thing, people always have their unlucky times. You shouldn’t cry, it’s useless even if you cried! If the money is gone, then we just need to win it back!”

“You told me that you came to Zhong Hai to work! You told me you came to the construction site to be a cement maker! But not a single day has passed and you’ve already started gambling!!”

Zhang Fugui was reprimanded without any words to refute, and had no choice but to raise his voice, “Shut up! Quickly take out the money!!”

“I’m not giving it! Even if I gave it to you, you would use it to gamble, you can take care of this yourself!”

Mo Qianni was raging, she shook Zhang Fugui off, and turned around to leave.

Zhang Fugui panicked, he violently pulled on Mo Qianni’s hand, then began to snatch Mo Qianni’s handbag, and frantically shouted, “Quickly give it to me!”

“You! Let go of me!!” Mo Qianni was after all a woman, how could she possibly compete with a man in terms of physical strength? The handbag in her hands slowly inched away from her, and she was nearly unable to hold on to it.

The men in the room watched this scene, and all laughed out loud, rejoicing in watching others’ misfortune.

“Zhang Fugui you’re truly incapable, even your daughter won’t listen to you!”

“Even your daughter refuses to save you, you deserved it you old gambling addict! Haha…….”

Zhang Fugui’s fury went up a level, he lost money and lost face, he immediately became hot-headed, he raised his hand and was about to give Mo Qianni a slap!

Mo Qianni also realized that Zhang Fugui wanted to slap her, but she refused to let go of the bag, so she could only lean her head to a side in an attempt to dodge this slap. Terrified, she closed her eyes, with a face of pain and grievance.

Right at this moment, Zhang Fugui’s arm couldn’t swing, as it was caught in mid-air, and he found it difficult to move an inch forward.

“Hey, it’s not like your daughter took your money, what are you beating your daughter for?” Yang Chen stood by Mo Qianni’s side, it was unknown when he moved to stop Zhang Fugui’s action.

Zhang Fugui was stunned, he panted heavily and asked, “Who are you?”

“Who I am isn’t important, what’s important is that you can’t hit her, and you can’t snatch away her money.” Said Yang Chen.

“This is my family’s matter, I want to take money from my daughter, what does it have to do with you!? On what basis can’t I hit her when she’s my daughter!?” Zhang Fugui arrogantly yelled.

“You’re so powerful, why don’t you fight with that bunch? Furthermore, according to what I know Mo Qianni isn’t actually your daughter, you’re merely her father in name, don’t overestimate yourself.” Yang Chen coldly spoke, and exerted some strength into the hand he used to grab Zhang Fugui with, and with a push he caused Zhang Fugui to retreat several steps.

Mo Qianni who was prepared to receive a hit earlier now raised her head, what she saw was Yang Chen standing in front of her. This figure whose back wasn’t considered broad allowed her make a sigh of relief, she felt warmth in her heart.

However, when she thought about this stepfather of hers who gambled like it was his second nature, had been so boorish to her and even wanted to beat her, Mo Qianni felt grief. She felt as if her heart was bitten by countless ants, and the accumulated ill treatment from the past overflowed, she couldn’t restrain herself from sobbing.

Yang Chen looked at this woman who was sobbing without a word, and could only wipe her tears. He finally understood why Mo Qianni dragged him here with her; this was a battle that no woman would dare fight alone!

Chapter 95: Grass that bends with the wind

The faces of the men in the room turned unsightly. The 1.8m tall Dajun whom Zhang Fugui was gambling with stood up, his unbuttoned shirt revealed his bare chest and well-developed pectoral muscles. As he stared at Yang Chen, he squinted his eyes until they formed a thin line, “Brat, get your brain working. Look carefully at who this territory belongs to. Paying a debt is right and unalterable, it’s only right for a father to punish his daughter. You better mind your own business!”

Zhang Fugui was released by Yang Chen, and was once again enraged from the humiliation. He pointed at Yang Chen and Mo Qianni saying, “Good... little slut, so you’ve found a man to help you today! You want me, your father, to be put to death days after arriving at Zhong Hai, don’t you? To bring about a comfortable life for yourself in the future!?”

After he heard Mo Qianni refuse to give him the money, Zhang Fugui was angered to the point of shivering, and began to swear as soon as he opened his mouth.

Teary-eyed, Mo Qianni looked at him full of despair and resentment, and formed a sneer with her lips, “You can say whatever you want, but the money you owe will be paid by yourself! Yang Chen, let’s leave!”

As she said that, Mo Qianni pulled on Yang Chen’s hand, intending to leave.

Yang Chen naturally didn’t mind, there was truly no compliment he could give to Zhang Fugui, this guy was either brain-dead or a retard, the words ‘no medicine can save’ would fit him better than anyone else. If he wasn’t Mo Qianni’s stepfather, that push Yang Chen gave him earlier would have been one that left him with a broken arm.

However, the men in the room obviously wouldn’t let the two leave so easily.

Dajun coldly snorted, “If you don’t pay up, don’t even think about leaving!”

The construction workers wore wicked smiles as they rushed out of the door to

block the two's path of return, and also gazed at all the skin Mo Qianni had exposed with a lustful light.

It could be said that Yang Chen had experienced something new today, which is being forcefully held from leaving in broad daylight. He couldn't help but smile towards Mo Qianni and say, "I wonder why this feels like we're filming a movie."

But Mo Qianni wasn't in the mood to joke with him. She tried very hard to resist the terror in her heart as she wiped away her tears and yelled: "What are you guys trying to do!? Do you believe that I wouldn't call the police!? What you're doing is illegal gambling! You will all be detained and fined!"

The men present heartily laughed, as if they heard the biggest joke in the world.

Dajun who looked cruel and untamed walked over, then said with a sardonic smile, "Little girl, let me tell you, in the past, people who owed me, Dajun, money in construction sites all said the same thing. They say that they would report it to the police, and will have us squat in a jail cell. But do you know what happened to them afterwards?"

"What?" Mo Qianni fearlessly stared at them and asked.

Dajun sneered, "In this world, the one with a stronger fist is reason. Once I beat someone to the point their parents can't even recognize them, how would they manage to report it to the police? Something like the law is just a piece of shit! In the end, they would still have to obediently pay up!"

Dajun sized Mo Qianni up from top to bottom repeatedly, clicked his tongue and said, "However... today's situation is a little special, I'm not a person who likes to beat women. If this beautiful young lady is willing to give us brothers some pleasure, then the matter regarding the money can be negotiated, and you'll be released later."

The meaning behind those words were already very clear, which was to use her 'flesh' to pay.

The men who were already harboring sinister thoughts looked at Mo Qianni wickedly, as if they were already awaiting to be served by this delicacy.

Zhang Fugui who was afraid of getting beat up nervously stood at the side.

Once he heard that there was hope regarding his debt, his spirits were immediately raised, and he shouted at Mo Qianni, “Little slut! Elder Brother Dajun has already spoken! What are you blankly staring for!?”

“What the fuck does this have to do with you!?” Dajun walked up and gave Zhang Fugui a slap, “Do I look like someone who would force myself on a woman? Besides, how could twenty thousand be of the same value as this tender lady?”

Hearing that Zhang Fugui actually wanted her to agree to Dajun’s request, Mo Qianni nearly fainted from anger, but it was as if her eyes had already run dry, and there was only resolve and anger left, with a grim smile she said, “Stop dreaming, you people can’t scare me. If you’re intelligent enough you’d let me go right now, otherwise I’ll really call the police!”

Mo Qianni’s performance gained admiration from Yang Chen, as expected of a successful career woman, despite having lost control of her emotions earlier, she managed to quickly regain her composure.

“I always say women are stupid, do you think I’m bullshitting?” Dajun scratched his ear, and spoke disdainfully, “Let me be honest with you, the chief of the local police station in this area has ties with my brother-in-law, even if you called the police, nothing would happen. You should know my brother-in-law, he’s the boss in the other room, and he’s been watching us. My money is his money, you think you guys can leave so easily?”

Yang Chen understood everything in a flash, so that fatty was Dajun’s brother-in-law, it’s no wonder that he let Dajun gamble in the neighboring office, it was all a ploy for them to fraudulently take the workers’ money.

Mo Qianni didn’t plan on staying any longer, and said, “Yang Chen, let’s go, ignore them!”

The two were about to move, but several men immediately blocked the path and stared at the two with an ominous glint in their eyes.

“Seize them and bring them in!” Dajun no longer bothered with words, he decided to use force.

When Zhang Fugui saw that this bunch were about to make a move, he hastily

wailed and cried out, “Brother Dajun it’s them who don’t want to give you the money! This has nothing to do with me!”

“Get the hell in!” Dajun violently kicked Zhang Fugui’s butt, and Zhang Fugui tumbled back into the room.

The other men walked forward, intending to capture Yang Chen and Mo Qianni separately, and haul them into the room, but how could Yang Chen possibly let things go according to what they wanted? He kept Mo Qianni who was a little hesitant by his side, and then lifted his leg to kick several of those who came near!

The few of them who was about to close in on Yang Chen couldn’t put up a stance in time, and were blown away by the abrupt kicks. It was like their chest bones were broken, but fortunately for them, they had good health, so they didn’t directly spit out blood.

Yang Chen saw their leader Dajun staring blankly, so he sneered, went up to him and grabbed him by his hair. He simply didn’t give Dajun any chance to react, and as he threw Dajun back into the room, he pulled off a large handful of hair.

Dajun fell so hard that he was seeing stars; he always thought that he would be afraid of no one with this robust body, but he never would have thought that he couldn’t even make half a move in front of this ordinary-looking man. He instead fell hard on the ground without the slightest chance to react!

The pain was so excruciating, it was like he lost a layer of skin on his head. Dajun touched his head, and felt a large bundle of hair was already pulled off, there was even blood flowing. With this touch, half of his hand was covered in dark-red blood, immediately terrifying him!

In an instant, the tables were turned. Yang Chen was like a shepherd directing a flock of sheep, with one toss and a string of kicks, he beat these built men to the point that they were crying for their mother.

Zhang Fugui’s eyes which was full of dismay and fear a moment ago revealed being pleasantly surprised when he witnessed this scene. He hastily endured the pain on his butt and ran to Yang Chen’s side, with a grateful smile he said, “So little brother is an expert, hehe, help me give them a proper beating! How dare

they beat me earlier! Haha!”

Yang Chen apathetically glanced at him, then lifted a leg to give his butt another kick!

“OWW!”

Zhang Fugui once again fell on his face and into the room.

“You! What are you kicking me for!? I’m Ni-zi’s father!” Scolded Zhang Fugui.

“I don’t have a father like you!!” Without waiting for Yang Chen to reply, Mo Qianni coldly stated.

“You..... you.....” Zhang Fugui wanted to rain curses, but after seeing Yang Chen’s grim stare, he swallowed it all back down, he didn’t dare make a sound.

Mo Qianni had yet to recover from her fright, but after seeing how this situation was already under Yang Chen’s control, she was both in awe of Yang Chen’s might and glad of her decision to get Yang Chen to accompany her. In the beginning, all she thought of was how inappropriate it was for her to come to a construction site alone, she never expected that Yang Chen would be such a big help. If he wasn’t here, the consequences would be dire!

“What is going on!?”

A voice came from the back, it was the fat manager who just returned from his rounds, who was also Dajun’s brother-in-law. After he saw that there was a messy fight, he cried out.

When Dajun saw the fatty coming over, it was like he found his savior. Without caring about his bleeding head, he loudly wailed, “Brother-in-law! Brother-in-law! You’ve returned! They refuse to pay up and even beat my people up!!”

Fatty’s face immediately turned black, his fleshy fierce face shook as he said, “What the hell are you guys made of! So many men and you can’t even settle one man and one woman!?”

“This brat knows some kung fu, owww it really hurts.....” One of the men who was on the ground cried out in pain.

Fatty looked at their wretched appearance, and was a little fearful in his heart as well, but he knew that this wasn’t the time to cower, so he pretended to be

calm as he said, “Brat, so what if you can fight? Society is now ruled by the law, you’d have to go to jail for beating people up. Do you believe that I can call the police here to arrest you now!?”

“Go to jail?” Yang Chen smiled, “You people operate illegal gambling like this, and even colluded to rob workers of their money, if this matter was to be exposed, it wouldn’t be as simple as just being locked in a jail cell for a couple of days, would it?”

Hearing this threat, the fatty’s face flushed, “Don’t speak off the cuff! It’s Zhang Fugui himself who wanted to gamble! What does that have to do with us!?”

“Is that so? It has nothing to do with you?” Yang Chen nefariously smiled, then slowly walked up to the fatty, and said, “Since you say it has nothing to do with you, then we’ll turn this into something that has to do with you, what do you think?”

“What... what do you mean?” Fatty was a little startled.

Yang Chen suddenly grabbed hold of the fatty’s neck, without waiting for the fatty to react, he dragged fatty into the room like he was dragging a dead dog; that two hundred pound body seemed insignificant in his hands!

After dropping the fatty off in the room, Yang Chen turned around and smiled at Mo Qianni, “Go to the opposite room and get me some blank papers and pens, I need them.”

Mo Qianni realized that things had already progressed far beyond her imagination, and everything happened too quickly, but she didn’t have any choice other than to trust Yang Chen, so she looked deeply at Yang Chen and nodded.

Very soon, Mo Qianni brought over some paper and ballpoint pens from the opposite room. After handing them over to Yang Chen, she wanted to ask something, but didn’t know how to say it.

Yang Chen understood what she meant, and gave her a relieving smile, “Don’t worry, there won’t be any fatalities.”

Everybody in the room were already frightened by Yang Chen to the point

where they dared not make a sound. All they wanted was to get some money out of this activity, they weren't some martyrs of a revolution, and they were afraid of getting beaten. So while being fully aware that they were no match against Yang Chen, they obviously wouldn't invite a beating if they could.

After Yang Chen had Mo Qianni leave the room, he locked the room's door. Then he turned to the bunch of men who were trembling in fear and displayed a harmless and gentle smile.

§

Chapter 96: Life in the future

Nearly an hour had passed from when they left Zhong Nan Corporation's construction site.

When he left the room, Yang Chen rolled up all the papers he held in his hand, and wore a tranquil expression. He didn't say a thing, which made Mo Qianni very stifled.

Back in the car, Yang Chen remained taciturn and Mo Qianni finally couldn't resist asking, "What is that in your hand?"

"You obviously wanted to ask me all along, yet purposefully waited for such a long time. You saw that I didn't take the initiative to tell you, so you only asked after you finally couldn't contain your curiosity, Miss Mo Qianni, could it be that this is what they call being reserved?"

When Yang Chen exposed what was in her heart, Mo Qianni blushed, then charmingly rolled her eyes at him and snatched the paper from him to take a look.

After reading a few pages of it, Mo Qianni's pair of limpid eyes widened but she couldn't get a word out, she looked at Yang Chen with a weird expression, and said, "I suddenly feel sympathy for them, just what kind of threat were they under for them to write such a suicidal admission of guilt....."

That's right, the paper that was in Yang Chen's hands were all detailed documents containing a series of confessions of crimes regarding those men's gambling, brawling, coercing and swindling. It didn't matter whether it was true or false, these were written by themselves with their handwriting, all of them had their signatures, handprints; blood was even used for the handprints.....

These things would be handed over to the police, and then all that's needed is to find a lawyer to sue them. In that way these fellas would have to go to jail for at least two to three years, and there'd be things like fines as well.

Yang Chen pointed at one of the papers, and said, "This piece is an IOU from

Dajun, if you need money, you can request a repayment of a hundred thousand debt from him or his brother-in-law. But if you feel too lazy to punish them, you can just throw it into the garbage bin.”

Mo Qianni looked at it, this was indeed in standard format, an IOU with both signature and thumbprint. If this was brought to court, it would also be considered as valid evidence.....

Originally she was the one who owed them a debt, but now for no reason at all she became the creditor!

“You couldn’t possibly have used torture to force a confession, like those in the movies, right?” Mo Qianni skeptically asked, and in her mind a bloody and terrible scene surfaced, causing her to tremble.

Yang Chen shook his head, with a serious face he answered, “Do I look like that kind of person? All I did was discuss with them about their life in the future.”

“Life in the future?”

“Yeah, I just asked them, do you want to continue your family’s bloodline? Or do you intend to end it.....”

“.....”

After a good while, Mo Qianni casually placed these papers that held the fate of that bunch into the glove compartment of the car, then started the car. After she drove the car out of the construction site, she sighed, and said with a clear voice, “Although I don’t know how you specifically did it, I have to say thanks, you’ve saved me again.”

“Those people tried to make a move against me, so it wasn’t just to help you. I won’t let them have a good time for my own reasons.” Yang Chen thought for a bit, then hesitantly spoke, “I made that stepfather of yours get lost, it wouldn’t be a problem, would it?”

“No problem, I’ve rented a house near this place for him, he can go there.” Mo Qianni creased her brows, obviously laden with grief by Zhang Fugui’s actions. She made a deep sigh then said, “I don’t want to think about that person. Yang Chen, can you accompany me to some place? I want to properly thank you.”

“You wouldn’t treat me to a meal at a roadside stall again, would you?” Yang Chen pouted, “The dishes there are pretty spicy, my lips swelled a little because of it.”

Mo Qianni’s mood appeared to turn better, for she once again displayed the confidence that only she possessed. She looked at Yang Chen with a wide smile, “Right now it’s tea time, let’s forget about eating, I’ll bring you to a place you’d definitely like.”

◦

Yang Chen was once again determined that wherever he went with Mo Qianni would definitely be a strange place.

Half an hour later, Mo Qianni brought Yang Chen to the coastal area in the east of Zhong Hai and into a place that resembled a forest park, then drove along the two-way road full of greenery. The red Audi slowly passed through the forest.

The woods in the surroundings were verdant and lush, the mountain’s scenery had streaks of yellow as autumn was gradually approaching; occasionally there were birds flying amongst the trees. The fallen leaves at the side of the road were lifted and scattered as the car passed through.

Only after another dozen or so minutes did Yang Chen see something on the hill, it was a sports centre that took up a huge amount of land. To be precise, it’s a sports centre for rich people who were way too bored and wanted a place to exercise. Gazing at it from afar, other than various outdoor ball game courts, there was even a racing track.

“The place you said that I would definitely like is this sports centre?” Yang Chen asked with a bitter face.

Mo Qianni nodded, “Whenever I’m in a bad mood, I would often come to this place to exercise. Once I exercised till I’m sweating all over, it’d be like nothing matters anymore.”

“But I don’t like to exercise.”

“You’re so good at fighting, how is it possible that you don’t like exercise?” Mo Qianni doubtfully asked.

Fighting depends on killing people, killing till one becomes proficient, exercise is just a waste of strength..... Yang Chen said in his heart, but just willfully said with his mouth, “I’m just a lazy person, even when I play games, I don’t play those that involve sports.”

“Then you can just sit somewhere in the centre and look at beauties exercise, I know you will like that.”

“Are there many beauties here?” Yang Chen became a little excited.

Mo Qianni looked at him with disdain, “Hmph, you’re already married yet still so lecherous. Let me tell you, this place, Maple Forest Fitness and Leisure Centre has been open for at least twenty years now, an overwhelming majority of high level businesswomen and young ladies of rich families come here to exercise. Rather than calling it a sports centre, you could even call it an all-around top grade country club, it goes without saying that there would be plenty of beauties here.”

“I may not be someone who has a stubborn character, but for your well-being, Miss Mo, we had better enter as soon as possible.” Yang Chen said with a ‘sincere’ expression.

Just as Mo Qianni had said, after entering Maple Forest Leisure Centre, there was an unceasing flow of women walking about, and adding on to that a majority of them wore hot pants for exercise that were of various colors, showing their bare thighs. Countless pairs of spotlessly white and slender legs swayed in front of his eyes, it could be considered a pleasurable experience for any man.

Due to exercising, many ladies had some sweat on their body, the scent of their body and their perfume became extremely distinct; as long as they walked by, their fragrance would seep into one’s nose.

Mo Qianni led the way, when she turned around and saw how Yang Chen looked all over without the slightest bit of concealing his gaze, it left a slightly bad taste in her mouth, “Hey, even if you want to look, can you not make it so obvious? What if their boyfriend or somebody is here? A conflict might arise, and that would be troublesome.”

“What kind of conflict could arise?” Yang Chen indifferently smiled, “In the

worst case, I could just shamelessly refuse to admit that I looked, wouldn't that be the end of it?"

Mo Qianni rolled her eyes, she couldn't be bothered to care about this rogue.

They walked towards Maple Forest Leisure Centre's main lounge, the main lounge was made up of transparent reinforced glass, its design seemed very bright and fashionable. The silver modern-looking stereoscopic logo and perfectly-fitted bonsai plants, made the whole lounge feel spacious and full of fresh air.

The employees who walked about were also beautiful young ladies or young men with sunshine-like smiles; they all wore t-shirts with a maple leaf logo. When they saw Mo Qianni and Yang Chen they revealed cordial smiles.

They walked to a gantry in the main lobby. Once they passed this gantry, they would be in the actual fitness centre. A lady with a sweet smile asked Mo Qianni for her pass.

Mo Qianni drew out a deep red card, passed it to the lady, then pointed at Yang Chen, "This is my assistant, can we go in together?"

"Miss, your card is a VIP card, you have the rights to bring one friend in." The lady patiently answered.

Yang Chen rubbed his nose and followed Mo Qianni in, then asked, "Why does it feel a little like being a little white face that's taken care of by his sugar mommy?"

[TL: Little white face refers to being an attractive young man in a derogative manner, could also mean pretty boy / gigolo.]

"Don't say that, your face isn't white at all." Mocked Mo Qianni.

Yang Chen felt disappointed, he rubbed his 'elegant and dashing' face, and secretly thought: *This girl is too naughty, she forgot that I'm her benefactor so quickly.*

"Miss Mo, it has been a while since you last came."

They only took a few steps when a familiar and mature voice came from the side, expressing a sincere welcome to Mo Qianni.

Mo Qianni turned back, and gave the person who approached a happy yet reserved smile. It was unknown if this was a PR worker's trained smile or her innate charm.

As for Yang Chen, the moment he turned around he was startled. *Why is it her?*

Tang Wan who had a casual attire also noticed that the one who entered was Yang Chen. Seeing Yang Chen's startled expression, she playfully smiled and greeted him as well, "Mr. Yang, we meet again."

Yang Chen noticed the sudden 'knowing' look from Tang Wan, and felt incredible awkward, he knew what she was thinking of.

The first time they met, he was looking for someone to comfort him of his loneliness that night, but in the end she rejected him. The second time, was in Li Jingjing's office, and they were together with the fresh and innocent Teacher Li. Yet, only a few days passed and he appeared alongside the confident and charming Mo Qianni in this leisure centre.

Don't even mention a woman like Tang Wan who looks intelligent, any woman would think in that direction.

"Boss Tang, you're acquainted with Yang Chen?" Mo Qianni curiously asked, in her eyes, it was simply inconceivable for Yang Chen to be acquainted with this woman who possessed an extraordinary position in Zhong Hai's high society.

Tang Wan laughed in a gentle and refined manner, "Met twice by coincidence, this is the third, but it seems like Mr. Yang and I are brought together by fate.

Cough cough Yang Chen awkwardly smiled and said, "It's indeed a great coincidence, to be able to bump into each other even at a remote place like this."

Mo Qianni couldn't help but smile and mock him, "What coincidence is there? Boss Tang is the owner of Maple Forest Leisure Centre, this is her territory, what coincidence is there here?"

Yang Chen was immediately speechless. *It's no wonder this woman could drive a limited edition Land Rover, she isn't just ordinarily rich.* Therefore he grudgingly said, "Aren't I silly and ignorant....."

This bullied expression caused the two amazing beauties to chuckle out loud, the mood also became a lot more harmonious.

Tang Wan seemed to have thought of something, and in a blink of an eye she amiably asked, “What have you two come to play? Gym? Swim? Yoga? Or something like racing?”

“We haven’t decided, I just came to relax, does Boss Tang have anything to recommend?” Mo Qianni asked.

Tang Wan nodded, “I was just going to watch a tennis match, the ones playing are all frequent visitors, and are all Maple Forest VIPs like Miss Mo. You’d likely bump into quite a number of acquaintances, everybody gets together to play, I wonder if the two of you would do me the honor of coming?”

Yang Chen was just thinking of rejecting, he wasn’t a VIP, how could there be acquaintances? But Mo Qianni pulled his arm, and quickly said, “Since there’s something great like this going on and Boss Tang has invited us, it’s only natural that we go, let’s go together!”

Chapter 97: The Eagle Shooting Heroes

Left without a choice, Yang Chen felt conflicted as he was dragged towards the tennis court, he bore a innocent expression and asked Mo Qianni, “If you want to go you can go ahead, I’ll go somewhere else to exercise. I’m not a VIP after all, it wouldn’t be appropriate for me to participate.”

Mo Qianni glared at him, then spoke in a low voice, “Don’t you think that I don’t know what you’re thinking of. You want to go to the swimming pool to look at women don’t you? Know this, the VIPs here are all rather famous in the business and political world. Since you work as PR for Yu Lei International, you must come in contact with these people, every level of relationship is a key to success, remember your leader’s advice!”

“I’m just someone who buys breakfast, my previous job was being a mutton skewer seller, I feel that these matters are still distant from me.”

“It isn’t far, the tennis court is right ahead.”

“.....”

Maple Forest Leisure Centre’s grandeur indeed lived up to expectations, once he entered the tennis court, Yang Chen felt as if he had entered a soccer stadium. This made him feel as if he was in a western country where tennis flourished, this is because tennis isn’t very developed in Huaxia, it was truly special to use such a large space to play tennis; he would be able to understand it if it was table tennis though.

On the tennis court with a meticulously coated red and green surface, there were already quite a number of people in tennis wear and swinging rackets, there were also beautiful ladies among them, the well-developed chests shaking as they ran was a sight to behold. The men were at a side cheering, but who knew what kind of “ball” they were actually looking at.

Following Tang Wan, they walked to the southeasternmost court. The facilities there were even more luxurious in comparison, other than the grandstand with leisure seats, there were several attendants serving beverages, and there was

beautiful blues music being played in the background.

At this time there were already quite a number of men and women chatting at the court, and the only ones who were actually playing tennis were two young ladies. According to the analysis of Yang Chen, a tennis amateur; these two ladies adopted very graceful postures, and had fascinating physiques, but their eyesight must be pretty bad. The ball is so slow yet they can't receive it, it was basically a 'you serve, I serve' situation, neither of them could receive a served ball.

"Boss Tang, you've finally come, we've been waiting for you." A handsome man said with a smile.

"I didn't expect Boss Xu to be here too, you're a truly rare visitor." Tang Wan generously shook hands with that man.

"If Boss Tang didn't come, it'd be boring for us to continue playing." Said a middle aged man with a large belly.

Tang Wan exposed a radiant smile, "Boss Shao sure knows how to crack a joke, today we're all here to have fun playing tennis, it'd have made no difference even if I didn't come."

"Don't say such a thing, if the host doesn't come, we won't have the heart of the group." A pretty lady flattered.

This bunch of rich people warmly greeted, but in ten sentences not a single one was true.

Mo Qianni and Yang Chen who made their appearance alongside Tang Wan naturally received attention as well, some of them instantly recognized Mo Qianni who was rather famous in the business world, and immediately came forward to greet her.

"I never expected Miss Mo to come as well, long time no see. Miss Mo is still as beautiful and charming as ever." A middle aged man with scholarly looks praised Mo Qianni, he seemed very sincere.

Mo Qianni nonchalantly smiled, "Boss Huang is too polite, I bumped into Boss Tang and she told me there's a game going on here, Qianni is just here to join in on the fun."

After that, a number of people came up to chat with Mo Qianni as well, the mood was pretty good, but they very naturally left Yang Chen alone, without rejecting him or getting closer to him. These elites of the business and political world had rather cruel judgement, they could easily tell that Yang Chen's true identity definitely wasn't some important person. From the way Yang Chen followed Mo Qianni, they were able to obtain a verdict, majority of them directly guessed that Yang Chen was something like an assistant to Mo Qianni, while some secretly thought that they could be having some sort of affair; this was something that was commonly seen in their circles.

As a result, Yang Chen relaxed and sat in a corner, watching the two women chat with a bunch of people he didn't recognize.

"Miss Mo, I heard that your company's Boss Lin is unwell and has been hospitalized, is this true?" As they chatted, there was finally someone who brought up Lin Ruoxi's condition.

Mo Qianni nodded with a slightly worried look, "That's right, Bureau Chief Zhao, but our CEO should be discharged next week, she's already back to good health."

Bureau Chief Zhao joyfully said, "That's good, our government's leader actually has a very high appraisal of your company's performance over the last few years. Boss Lin is a lady who could triumph over men, at such a young age she managed to lead Yu Lei International to obtain such fantastic results, with even more boldness than the previous CEO. She's truly a necessary pillar for Zhong Hai's chamber of commerce. I still remember the time last year when the top ten entrepreneurs of Zhong Hai were being listed, Boss Lin's unforgettable charm..."

When Lin Ruoxi was mentioned, the bunch began flattering again, several young and promising men also showed slight expressions of yearning.

Yang Chen secretly forced a laugh, looks like there is nothing that could be done about Lin Ruoxi's cold temper, if she showed a little more warmth, the men that had ideas about her would indeed be enough to flood her doorway.

Seeing that they had chatted just about enough, Tang Wan suggested, "Everybody came here to play tennis, I think we can just leave official matters aside for now; I wonder who would like to go up to warm up first?"

“Haha, Boss Tang is right, then let me Old Liu go up to show off a trick or two, who would like to exchange blows with me?” A straightforward middle aged boss smiled as he picked up his tennis racket and asked.

“Let me.” A slightly plump woman who had obviously taken good care of her skin picked up her racket with a smile, “Big Brother Liu must show me mercy, I’ve just given birth a few months ago, my body still isn’t it tip-top condition.”

“For sure for sure.....”

Yang Chen looked at the woman swinging her plump butt to chat and play tennis with the man, in his heart he secretly laughed and thought whether this was playing tennis or flirting?

The warm-up game for tennis had only just begun, and another bunch of people came from the side of the court. The one leading them was a man who wore sunglasses, pink polo tee, and had a fair and clear skin. He wasn’t considered tall or large, but he had a charming aura which ordinary men didn’t have, causing him to seem rather feminine and glamorous. If it wasn’t for his adam’s apple, he could easily be taken as a youthful maiden with gender neutral makeup.

The man was accompanied by three subordinates who held sports equipment, and four bodyguards fully clad in suits; even under the blazing sun they didn’t let allow any slack, and they vigilantly observed their surroundings, they seemed to be of high quality.

The appearance of this group of people received the attention of many others at the court, but their expressions were somewhat different from when Tang Wan came. Although they were still smiling, these people’s eyes contained a tinge of fear.

“I never thought Young Boss Zhou would come, your presence truly brings light to my humble place.” As the host, Tang Wan was the first to go up and greet him.

The young man with the surname Zhou gently smiled, took off his sunglasses, and revealed a pair of enchanting single-eyelids. He made a light handshake with Tang Wan, and immediately let go in a refined manner, “Boss Tang must be joking, I, Zhou Dongcheng had just used my father’s reputation to get to know

everybody here, I'd be happy as long as everybody doesn't hate me for interrupting midway."

Hearing the name 'Zhou Dongcheng', Yang Chen's eyebrows creased, he pulled on Mo Qianni's elbow, and whispered a question, "This Zhou Dongcheng, is he Dongxing Group's Zhou Dongcheng?"

Mo Qianni gave him a weird look, and said with a smile, "I couldn't tell, you even know about the Dongxing Group, looks like you aren't actually completely ignorant. That's right, he is Zhou Guangnian's only son, the great Young Master of Dongxing. I'd advise you to stay away from him, otherwise it could be dangerous."

"Dangerous? He seems rather polite though." It was the first time Yang Chen met Zhou Dongcheng in person, he'd never have thought that Rose's potential enemy's young master would be a delicate young man like this. Moreover, from his manners, Yang Chen definitely wasn't able to tell that he was born as a part of the underworld.

Mo Qianni face warped a little, and she used small voice to tell Yang Chen, "The danger I mentioned, is because he doesn't like women....."

If he doesn't like women, then what does he like?

That's right, men!

Yang Chen quivered all over, it's no wonder he refused to touch a top grade beauty like Tang Wan for a single moment longer than necessary, it wasn't about being polite, he just didn't like coming into contact with women!

Mo Qianni saw how Yang Chen's face looked like one that had just eaten rat poison, so she chuckled and whispered, "What are you afraid of, with a face like yours he wouldn't even look at you!"

But Yang Chen wasn't listening, because he had suddenly thought of something. A few days ago he saved Chen Bo while he was out for supper, at that time Chen Bo said there was a man with the surname Zhou that requested for Chen Bo to serve him. Surnamed Zhou, yet able to force a small gang leader like Guo Ziheng to personally go out to catch someone, seems like there was only this man, Zhou Dongcheng!

Thinking in this way, he was able to connect the dots. Some time ago, he was followed by a black Honda with several strangers, and was puzzled as to who sent them, but now it seemed like it had something to do with Zhou Dongcheng. It was him who told Guo Ziheng to let that boss come look for him after all.

Sure enough, after Zhou Dongcheng simply chatted with the people of the business and political world for a while, then carefreely looked towards Yang Chen while giving him a “lovely” smile.

Yang Chen originally thought that would be all, but after Zhou Dongcheng chatted with several of those big bosses for a while, under their astonished gazes, he walked with a strong ladies’ perfume smell to Yang Chen’s side, and sat down in a womanly manner.

“Hello mister, would you mind if I sat here?” Zhou Dongchen had a face that resembled male korean celebrities, thin lips and rosy face, looking at him closely now, his skin looked pretty smooth as well.

Although Yang Chen had met a number of men like this overseas, it’s the first time one sat so close to him. He forced a smile and spoke in a reserved manner, “You’ve already sat down, what’re you asking me for?”

“To sit is my right, I asked because I wanted to know your opinion.”

“Then can I not permit you to sit here?”

“You can’t.” Zhou Dongcheng spoke unreservedly.

Seeing the two who were strangers speak like they were familiar with each other, those who knew better revealed weird smiles; they naturally thought that the homo Zhou Dongcheng had already taken fancy to the male secretary Mo Qianni brought.

Mo Qianni’s mouth was hung open, amazed to the point that she couldn’t speak a word. She had just said that Zhou Dongcheng wouldn’t have interest in Yang Chen, but she didn’t expect her words to have the opposite effect. After seeing Yang Chen’s distressed look, Mo Qianni nearly couldn’t hold back her laughter.

The two’s conversation wasn’t in whispers, so a number of people in their surroundings heard it.

At this time, Zhou Dongcheng courteously asked, “I wonder how should I address you, Mister. My name is Zhou Dongcheng, currently Dongxing Group’s vice-chairman.”

Feigning ignorance? Yang Chen felt a burst of discomfort in his heart. He pouted and said, “My (laozi) surname is Yang, name’s Xijiu, Yang Xijiu! Yu Lei International’s PR Department’s number one male PR. Incidentally, there are a total of two men running for that position.....”

[TL: Laozi is a rude way of saying ‘I’ to someone, could be referred to as ‘I, your father’ but it’d sound weird in this case. As for his made up name Xijiu ‘西就’, it’s to complement the name Dongcheng ‘东成’ because together they form 东成西就, which is a movie called The Eagle Shooting Heroes, a parody of Louis Cha’s Legend of Condor Heroes.]

Chapter 98: Isn't playing tennis

Despite how emotionally stable these top level executives were, they couldn't help but laugh when they heard the name 'Yang Xijiu'.

The movie named 《The Eagle Shooting Heroes》 was quite popular, as a result the bunch of people very quickly understood the meaning behind Yang Chen's words. However, after all that laughter, they suddenly realized that the situation wasn't right. This man was facing Dongxing Group's Young Master Zhou Dongcheng, the crown prince of Zhong Hai's east region's underworld. This brat dared to make a joke out of him, does he not want to live anymore!?

But strangely, Zhou Dongcheng didn't react to that with anger, he instead pursed his lips into a smile and said, "Mr. Yang sure knows how to crack a joke, but I do like men with humor."

His voice was gentle and sweet, it seemed to even contain a little bashfulness and joy as well.

Yang Chen could only feel goosebumps all over his body. He drew out a cigarette from his pant's pocket and lit it up. Only after he blew out a breath of smoke did he manage to calm down and say, "I don't like being liked by other men."

"You don't like being liked, but that doesn't mean I can't like you." Zhou Dongcheng blew past that obstacle by saying that.

Yang Chen held the cigarette in his hand, then combed his hair with the same hand, he wasn't afraid of the cigarette burning his hair. This soft and sticky Dongxing's young lord was more troublesome than he imagined. If it was a fiendish tall and sturdy type of man, Yang Chen wouldn't be afraid at all, but this fella was like a bunch of cotton, strength was useless against him.

The guests in their surroundings had already begun doing their own thing, there were also several people on the tennis court slowly volleying the ball.

The warm sunlight scattered all over the court, Yang Chen stretched his waist

and no longer breathed a word.

Zhou Dongcheng stared at Yang Chen smoking with a frown for a long while, then continued speaking with a smile, "I know that there may be some kind of misunderstanding between Mr. Yang and I, but I sincerely wish to be friends with Mr. Yang, I wonder if I have that chance?"

"Friends?" Yang Chen vaguely replied, "Your way of making friends is to send a car to tail me?"

Zhou Dongcheng did not deny it, he frankly nodded and said, "That did happen, but that was just an accident. I did not expect Mr. Yang to adopt such extreme measures either, but I can guarantee that I will not pursue that matter. Actually, the order I gave them was merely to investigate Mr. Yang's situation."

"I don't like people investigating me." Yang Chen dully said.

Zhou Dongcheng stared at him face to face without the slightest bit of fear and said, "Mr. Yang Chen, I guarantee that it won't happen again. As a man who I see as magnanimous, I believe you would forgive me for my one reckless move."

Already being addressed with honorifics, Yang Chen truly couldn't bring himself to spout curses, so he just indifferently nodded, "Fine, forget it, I'm also too lazy to create trouble."

"In that case, as friends would you play a game of tennis with me?" Zhou Dongcheng suddenly asked.

"I've never played before."

"It doesn't matter, what's important is the friendship formed, not the comparison of points."

Zhou Dongcheng's words were impossible to refute, utilizing his spontaneousness to form favorability to the point of having no other choice.

Yang Chen sighed, took the initiative to stand up, walked to Tang Wan's side and said, "Boss Tang, lend me a tennis racket."

Tang Wan had been keeping an eye on Yang Chen and Zhou Dongcheng's conversation. Although she couldn't hear what they were saying, she guessed that the two had known each other before. She didn't say any superfluous words

and nodded, signalling an employee to bring Yang Chen a standard racket.

Zhou Dongcheng's attendants also brought out a pink tennis racket immediately, it was of the same color as his shirt. This strange choice of color didn't attract the attention of the people, because in their circles, the secret of Zhou Dongcheng liking men and being fond of adopting feminine styles wasn't a secret at all, they had all seen it before and were used to it.

When Yang Chen and Zhou Dongcheng walked to the court together, the two ladies who were initially playing obediently got out of the way.

Many of the businessmen and politicians present began to doubt their own judgement, for Yang Chen to chat with Zhou Dongcheng, then play tennis with him, could his true identity be that of someone extraordinary? But there wasn't someone like him known in Zhong Hai. They began to guess that perhaps he was the young master of a big family in another region.

"Erm....." Yang Chen walked to the side of the court, and asked Mo Qianni who was in the midst of chatting with other people, "Miss Mo, how do you play tennis?"

Mo Qianni was stunned. Although she didn't know why this man asked such a silly question, she still gave a simple explanation, "When someone knocks the ball over and after it bounces off the ground once then you may knock it back. It has to fall into the opponent's court, if it falls out of the court, points will be deducted."

"Oh, I understand." Yang Chen recalled what he saw on television in the past, and had a rough understanding of how to play.

"You don't know how to play?" Mo Qianni realized a problem, and doubtfully asked.

Yang Chen honestly replied, "I've never played before, but I now have a rough understanding of how to play."

People who have played tennis are basically all very clear of this, despite how large the tennis racket is, and how much bigger the tennis ball is in comparison to ping pong, the truth is that in this court that doesn't seem very large, trying to hit a ball that bounces off the ground isn't a simple matter at all.

Many beginners who try tennis for the first time would feel the same thing, which is how they obviously see the ball in front of their eyes, yet they're unable to hit it no matter how they try. As for scoring a point with a counter, it was even more difficult.

Under the watchful gazes of the bunch who were expecting a good show, Yang Chen swaggered over with a cigarette in his mouth and racket in hand onto the court, then spoke to Zhou Dongcheng on the other side, "Bring it, I'll play a few shots with you."

At the sides of the court, many people understood what he was referencing and displayed queer expressions. Even Mo Qianni blushed a little. *This fella always speaks so crudely.*

Yet Zhou Dongcheng just warmly smiled, tossed up the ball, and performed a serve! His movements weren't considered perfect, but his jump and swing looked very graceful.

The ball streaked across with an arc, went over the net, fell onto the ground on Yang Chen's side of the court and bounced up at an oblique angle!

Yang Chen was already standing at where the ball bounced up from. As he was holding on to the cigarette with his right hand, he very naturally held the racket in his left, and casually swung it at the ball!

"Bang!!" The collision between the ball and the racket created a loud crashing sound!

Under everybody's astonished gaze, after the ball flew past the net, it continued to fly out of the court!

Like a missile fired towards outer space, it flew in a diagonal line, going past another thirty meters or so, even flying past the ten meter tall wire fencing, then began to fall towards the parking lot outside the court.

Several ladies cried out in alarm, was this a ball hit by someone using his left hand!?

Even if it hit on target, and was swung out of the court, that would be acceptable. But this man just casually swung it with his left hand, and it actually flew way over the wire netting!

Even if a comfortably shaped stone with a perfect weight was given to the them, none of them would dare say they could easily toss it over this wire netting!

Seeing everybody including Zhou Dongcheng's reactions in his the surroundings, Yang Chen realized that he had used too much strength. Actually he didn't really use too much strength, he just underestimated the way the tennis ball would react to the tennis racket.

Yang Chen awkwardly smiled and tapped away the ash on his cigarette, then said, "My apologies, this ball is rather bouncy, I'll go pick up the ball after finishing the game."

The others stiffly smiled, then oddly looked at Yang Chen's arm which had muscles that didn't seem that developed. If someone actually gets punched by that fist, that someone would probably lose their life.

"Mr. Yang truly has godly strength." Zhou Dongcheng was someone who had seen the world, and he also had prior knowledge of Yang Chen possessing abnormal strength, so he managed to quickly regain his calm. Zhou Dongcheng retrieved a new ball from his attendant and said, "Let's continue then."

This time Yang Chen didn't use that much strength, he just calculated how much strength was needed to send to ball to the opposite side of the court, as for the angle and speed, he didn't really care about that, the trajectory of the tennis ball was simply like a crawling tortoise in Yang Chen's eyes, it didn't give him the slightest amount of pressure.

Everybody watched Yang Chen slowly walking on the court, and every time he stopped right at where the ball would bounce at, then he would return it with a casual one-arm swing. The ball would always fall at where Zhou Dongcheng stood, there wasn't much movement needed for Zhou Dongcheng to receive the ball.

In everybody's eyes, Yang Chen wasn't playing, he was simply toying with the ball!

Although the forms Yang Chen took when playing tennis belonged to the 'extremely ugly' category, this didn't affect the crowd's evaluation of his skill.

Many young ladies had their eyes glowing as they watched him. Yang Chen with the cigarette in his mouth, hair rustling with the wind, and his slight frown along with that leisure expression. These were all embedded into their minds.

Tang Wan sighed as she noticed Mo Qianni at the side who was blankly looking at Yang Chen, in her eyes there was the same bewitchment as the other ladies.

In Tang Wan's opinion, Yang Chen was without a doubt a playboy. This opinion was set in stone ever since the first time they met at the river when he wanted her to be his one night stand, and was further reinforced when they bumped into each other at her daughter's school with Li Jingjing. She didn't expect that this time it would be Mo Qianni.

Li Jingjing was an innocent type of girl, it was normal if she was tricked by Yang Chen, but a famous PR like Mo Qianni, an outstanding administrator actually fell into his trap? This made Tang Wan ponder how Yang Chen managed to capture the hearts of these two ladies who had totally different personalities yet were both remarkable women.

At this moment, seeing the man wantonly swinging with a crappy form, yet able to fully grasp where the ball goes, Tang Wan began to understand. It seemed like the unique trait this man possessed was something other men couldn't possibly possess.

Yang Chen didn't know that Mo Qianni who stood outside the court was looking at him in a way she never had before, and moreover didn't know that he had entered Tang Wan's blacklist. All Yang Chen noticed was that Zhou Dongcheng on the other side was almost lacking the strength to return the ball. It seemed like after continuously smacking the ball dozens of times, Zhou Dongcheng was burnt out.

When the ball once again shot towards him, Yang Chen directly caught the ball with his hand, casually spat the cigarette butt out of his mouth, and shouted towards Zhou Dongcheng, "Still playing?"

Zhou Dongcheng perspired profusely, 'delicately' bent forward, and propped himself up with his hands on his knees. He tossed away the racket, waved his hands with great difficulty, and said in an aggrieved manner, "No... not playing anymore....."

“Then I’m leaving.” Yang Chen truly wished to stay here for not a moment longer. Originally, due to Rose, Zhou Dongcheng was inevitably his enemy, but this enemy kept giving him enchanting smiles, how could he bear it!?

Zhou Dongcheng became a little panicked, he didn’t care about the strain and gasped as he shouted, “Yang... Mr. Yang please wait, I wonder... I wonder if I have the pleasure of inviting Mr. Yang to dinner?”

Invite your sister!

Once Yang Chen imagined himself at a candle-lit table sitting with a gorgeously dressed man who flung flirtatious glances at him on the opposite side of the table, he felt chills all over. He walked over to the side of the court and grabbed hold of Mo Qianni’s little hand and said to her, “Let’s go, I’m hungry and want to eat!”

After he said that, he didn’t even give Mo Qianni a chance to reply, and forcefully dragged her out.

Feeling the intimate contact with Yang Chen from her hand, feeling that scorching heat, she couldn’t help but blush. Her heart started to beat like a drum, but she didn’t have the strength and didn’t feel like pulling away her hand, so she could only turn her head and hastily bid farewell to the several bosses and leave the tennis court with Yang Chen.

After Zhou Dongcheng’s attendants supported Zhou Dongcheng who had a regretful face to the side of the court, one of them woefully asked, “Young Master, that Yang Chen failed to appreciate your kindness, shall we get some brothers to send him a little present?”

Zhou Dongcheng gloomily swept a glance at him, nearly making that man pee in his pants.

“Yang Chen is my friend, he’s a true man, don’t you dare speak ill of him in my presence in the future!”

“Yes... yes... yes Young Master.....”

Zhou Dongcheng looked towards the direction Yang Chen left, and once again displayed a look of infatuation.

Chapter 99: A rather long story

When they left Maple Forest Leisure Centre, Mo Qianni was gasping for breath from all that running.

Seeing Yang Chen who still refused to let go of her hand, Mo Qianni pretended to cough, it was unknown whether it was due to shyness or the exercise that her face was bright red.

“What’s wrong? Is something wrong with your throat? Miss Mo?” Yang Chen feigned ignorance as he asked.

Mo Qianni glared at him, “Release your pig trotters!”

Yang Chen whose face wasn’t the slightest bit red laughed, but he still let go of that white and tender hand. The feeling of holding it was great though, as he took the chance to explain, “Miss Mo, these words of yours are incorrect. Pig trotters can’t possibly bend and grab onto your hand.”

Mo Qianni who already knew that bickering with this fella wouldn’t end well, so she didn’t bother arguing with him, and directly walked towards her car.

After the two of them got on the path back, Yang Chen turned to ensure that nobody had chased after them. He then sighed a breath of relief.

Mo Qianni wore a rather playful smile, “So someone with thick skin also has people they’re afraid of, are you worried that Zhou Dongcheng would chase after us?”

Yang Chen was truly worried of that sissy chasing after him. He awkwardly smiled, “Miss Mo is truly wise and intelligent, you managed to figure out such a profound problem.”

“Relax, although he was born as a part of the underworld, in our circles he’s famous for being modest and polite. There isn’t a shred of a big family’s young master’s demeanor to be seen from him, he never uses force to make people comply.”

“Hearing you say such a thing, he seems very kind.....” Yang Chen mumbled.

Mo Qianni stretched her hand out to tap on the volume rocker on the steering wheel, bringing the music volume to the minimum, then said, "Of course he can't possibly always be so kind, if he was truly so harmless, then everybody wouldn't be so fearful of him. I'm just saying that if you don't provoke him, and don't do anything that would harm his bottom line, Zhou Dongcheng would always treat you warmly, this sets him apart from his father."

"You've even met Zhou Guangnian before?" Asked Yang Chen.

Mo Qianni glanced at him like she was looking at a moron, "Of course. The Dongxing Group isn't some small enterprise, it isn't anything strange for us to see him during some public events. However, to be honest that old man truly doesn't look like a businessman, despite many years of laundering his image, every time I've see him I feel like he's shrouded in darkness, with a gloomy aura that makes one's heart fluster."

That goes without saying, how could he be the east region's underworld emperor otherwise? Yang Chen felt that it's rather normal for Zhou Guangnian to be that way.

As she spoke to this point, Mo Qianni maintained silence for a while, then said, "As thanks for helping me today, I'll give you a chance to choose where we eat."

Once Yang Chen heard this, he celebrated the fact that he no longer needed to follow Mo Qianni to weird places, he thought for a moment and said, "I want to eat hotpot!"

Mo Qianni shot him a glance, "It isn't even winter time yet, why eat hotpot? The heat from it would cause acne."

"You said you'd let me choose, well what do you feel like eating?" Yang Chen asked in grief.

"We'll eat at a roadside stall."

"Eat at a roadside stall again!? Big sis, didn't you say that you were giving me the chance to choose!?" Yang Chen bitterly smiled.

Mo Qianni snorted, "Like you said, what I mentioned was chance, not the right to choose, the place you chose has been vetoed, now we'll go to a roadside stall!"

He painfully shut his eyes. This woman was too unreasonable!

o

Half an hour later, Yang Chen depressedly sat across Mo Qianni in Sis Xiang's roadside stall; various Sichuan dishes were laid in front of them, and the bright red chilies looked spicy enough to kill Yang Chen just from looking at them.

Because it was still early, there weren't many people in the roadside stall, so it seemed rather deserted compared to the last time. The cool winds of autumn's beginning blew past, bringing with it a slight chill.

Mo Qianni drank a mouthful of white spirit, then looked at Yang Chen who looked like a bullied child. In a displeased manner she said, "What kind of expression is this, I'm treating you to a meal yet you have a face of hardship."

Yang Chen wiped away the sweat on his forehead caused by the spiciness, "Unlike you who began eating spicy things since childhood, I rarely eat such spicy food overseas."

"Oh, I nearly forgot, this great scholar in front of me had studied abroad, a wild brat like me who was raised in a small mountain village can't compare." Mo Qianni ridiculed.

Yang Chen couldn't be bothered to bicker with her. He suddenly thought of something, with a serious expression he asked, "How are you planning to deal with your stepfather Zhang Fugui? I previously didn't know what the reason was for your depression the past few days, but now that I think of it, it should be that man giving you a headache. If you need my help just ask, I'm very free and you know it."

Mo Qianni's chopsticks froze, she looked up straight at Yang Chen, then asked, "You've been paying attention as to whether I've been depressed or not?"

"Erm..." Yang Chen smiled embarrassedly, he couldn't possibly say that he had been secretly taking glances at her every time she walked past, then staring at that butt of hers, could he? So he just said, "Our colleagues in the office all say that you've been in a bad mood, that's how I found out."

A little disappointment showed in Mo Qianni's eyes, she softly said, "Do you remember the phone call I picked up the last time we came here?"

“I remember.” Yang Chen also remembers that he was forcibly hugged that night!

“It was a call from my mother, she said Zhang Fugui wanted to look for a job in Zhong Hai, and wanted me to help him arrange it.” Mo Qianni sneered, “Fact was he didn’t come here to build a career, he had built up a pile of debts in our hometown, and if it wasn’t for me paying off his debts, he’d already be beaten to death a long time ago... but his reputation was already so horrid there, so he decided to escape to Zhong Hai.

“You knew perfectly well that he was like this. Why did you allow him to come here?” Yang Chen curiously asked.

“Would you mind listening to a rather long story?” Mo Qianni returned with another question

“If the next time we go to eat you don’t bring me here, I’m willing to hear what you have to say.....”

“Not possible.”

“Erm...” Yang Chen posed a sad smile, “You can go on to say it then.”

Mo Qianni’s lips formed the smile of a victor, then she dully began to narrate.

“I’ve told you before that my father died when I was thirteen, then my mother remarried to Zhang Fugui. Zhang Fugui was one of the few men in the village who hadn’t married. He was considerably young, and had always liked my mother, so my mother agreed to the marriage in the end. Actually, at that time Zhang Fugui wasn’t much of a gambler; although we were poor, we still had enough food and clothes.”

“..... But a few months later, my mother fell sick due to her weak constitution and from working at the farm everyday, she was bedridden. At that time, I was just thirteen years old, after I went through elementary school in the village, I stayed at home and wasn’t able to obtain a middle school education. Fact was we didn’t even have a middle school in our area.”

“During that time I wanted Zhang Fugui to bring my mother to the closest little town to see a doctor, because I was afraid that after my father left me, my mother would leave me too. If that were the case, I would truly be an orphan. I

was very afraid, and kept begging Zhang Fugui... before that I had never called him daddy, but to urge him that time, I kept calling him 'daddy', 'daddy'"

"But Zhang Fugui suddenly changed, to the point where I didn't know him anymore, like he was a stranger... he didn't listen to a word I said. Other than asking for some herbal medicines from the village chief, and giving it to me to boil it for my mother, he didn't do a single thing....."

"Afterwards, an auntie who was my neighbor told me that Zhang Fugui was too poor, he didn't have the money, even if we went to the town's hospital, there was no way to let my mother see the doctor, and it was even more unlikely for us to be able to afford the medicine. He was so poor that he couldn't even afford to buy the ticket to take the bus to the town."

As she spoke till this point, Mo Qianni's voice turned a little hoarse, her eyes reddened, then she poured herself a small cup of white spirit and downed it.

"Then your mother, she's....." Yang Chen didn't continue the question.

Mo Qianni replied, "Afterwards my mother turned for the better. I don't know whether it was sympathy from the heavens, or the village chief uncle's herbal medicine being effective. However, after that sickness my mother seemed to become a lot older....."

"However, I was still very afraid then, I began to think, if mom turned sick again, and we still didn't have the money to bring her to see a doctor, what was going to happen? I didn't dare think more of it, I only had one thought at that time which was to make sure mom had enough money to go see a doctor....."

"So you came to Zhong Hai alone?" Yang Chen suddenly understood.

Mo Qianni nodded, and mocked herself, "Do you find it very absurd, very foolish? A little girl who wasn't even fourteen yet, pretended to be very mature, yet she actually didn't know a thing. She just took the train to Zhong Hai, with a wish to earn enough money to let her mother see a doctor."

"You weren't silly, you were incredible. I'm very curious as to how you attained the money to buy a train ticket." Asked Yang Chen.

Mo Qianni's dodged his gaze, hesitated for a moment and said, "I stole a person's wallet at the train station....." After she said that, she lowered her voice

and asked, “Will you look down on me, and feel that I’m very shameless? Despite having done such a terrible thing, I’m still able to boldly say it out?”

What’s stealing a wallet? I(laozi) even robbed a bank before..... Yang Chen thought, but he didn’t say it of course, he just sincerely shook his head and said, “I won’t, for all humans err. At least you’re much more skillful than me, I’ve gone into the police station twice now.”

Mo Qianni finally laughed, then continued to say, “You may know a little about what happened after. When I came here alone, I looked for ways to self-study. I received help from Sis Xiang and others who came from the village along with some help from the welfare agencies to get into middle school. After that, Ruoxi’s grandma, who was Yu Lei International’s CEO at the time, came to my school to give a speech. She took fancy to me and provided me financial aid. From then on, I was able to raise my head in Zhong Hai. If it weren’t for the previous CEO, there wouldn’t be the Mo Qianni of today..... You should be able to understand why I became so angry when I found out a rogue like you married Ruoxi, right?”

Yang Chen understandingly nodded.

The greatest favor in the world was no other than providing help when one needs it most. Although Mo Qianni seemed unperturbed about it, it obviously wasn’t easy for her to come out from a remote mountain village without anybody to rely on, she was just a little girl who had nothing. She was provided education, brought into the high society, and even became one of the elites in Zhong Hai’s business world. What Lin Ruoxi’s grandmother gave to Mo Qianni definitely wasn’t just monetary aid, perhaps she was even more of a spiritual pillar for Mo Qianni to lean on. Of course, throughout that time the amount of effort Mo Qianni put in had to be several times of others, the sweet, the sour, and the suffering involved, only she herself understood.

“Later on, I finally earned some money. I still remember the first time I sent my mother some money, my mother cried on the phone for a long time, but we were very happy..... My mother knew that I had grown up, and I knew I could finally take care of her.....”

“However, that was also when Zhang Fugui began to indulge himself in

gambling. After he knew that I was able to earn a considerable amount every month, and that I had deep roots in Zhong Hai, he began rolling higher and higher. From what began as cents, turned to a few dollars, then he began betting tens and twenties, in the last two years, he was already gambling hundreds a time.” Mo Qianni depressingly said.

Yang Chen creased his brows, “Then why don’t you let your mother divorce him, and let your mother leave him? Wouldn’t that be the end of it if you brought her here to live with you? With your income, you’re perfectly capable of allowing the both of you to live well, why care about that gambling addict?”

Mo Qianni made a sad smile and said, “In your eyes, he’s a disgraceful gambling addict, and in my eyes, he’s a useless and disgraceful stepfather..... but to my mother, he’s a man who sheltered her during her most bitter period of life, a man who accompanied her for over ten years. No matter how bad Zhang Fugui was, he hadn’t done anything outrageous to my mother, and had always kept her company.....”

“So for your mother, you kept helping Zhang Fugui settle his gambling debts? And even let him come to Zhong Hai?” Yang Chen had already understood the crux of the matter, and felt sad, every family had its own problems. If he hadn’t heard Mo Qianni say it herself, who would’ve known that this incredibly bright and beautiful executive had such a dark past?

Mo Qianni nodded, “What more can I do? I can’t force my mother to divorce, my mother can’t reject Zhang Fugui’s imploring, and I can’t reject my mother’s request.”

“Do you think your mother loves Zhang Fugui?” Asked Yang Chen.

Mo Qianni was stunned, then said, “If she doesn’t love him, she wouldn’t stay with him in that poor and secluded place. Despite knowing that her daughter had a house, a car and a career in this flourishing city, she still silently stayed with Zhang Fugui, and stayed in that shabby house with a two mu farmland.”

[TL: Mu = 0.0667 hectares]

“Why are you so sure about that? I’m guessing that perhaps your mother just doesn’t want your career to be harmed by her coming here. After all, if others knew about your background, it may be detrimental to your career.”

“I don’t care about that!” Mo Qianni was a little agitated, she truly hadn’t thought about this point before, hearing Yang Chen point it out for her, she suddenly turned a little sober, “Do you think there’s really such a possibility? That my mother isn’t staying because she loves Zhang Fugui, but because she’s worried about causing a negative impact on my career?”

Yang Chen thought for a moment, then made a strange smile, “If you’re willing to believe me, we can conduct an experiment, after that the truth will come to light.”

“Experiment?” Mo Qianni doubtfully looked at Yang Chen, but she instinctively trusted him, so she made a slight nod.

§

Chapter 100: It's my honor to tell you

It was already almost 10pm when they separated, but Yang Chen hadn't forgotten what happened that morning. He had been able to get out of the police station safely thanks to Lin Ruoxi, who had gotten Lawyer Zhang to get him out. A whole day had passed yet he hadn't gone to say thanks or explained the cause of it all, it can't be delayed. Even though Lin Ruoxi probably doesn't want to hear it, he still felt that it would be better if he went to meet her.

Therefore, Yang Chen drove to the hospital alone after getting back to his car.

When he was about to reach Lin Ruoxi's ward, Yang Chen's footsteps came to a pause, because he shockingly found out that there were two men in jackets standing by the door. Yang Chen could easily determine that the opposite party were soldiers. Based on his instinct, their posture and the way they surveyed their surroundings, he could feel the unique temperament of outstanding soldiers.

What kind of person was in the room? To even have soldiers like that guarding the door?

Yang Chen felt a bad premonition, he didn't choose to evade them and instead walked towards the door even quicker than before.

"Halt!" A man who stood by the door stretched out his hand to block Yang Chen's path, "You're not allowed to enter!"

Yang Chen frivolously smiled and said, "Hey bros, I'm here to visit the patient, there's no need to be so strict is there? I'm very close to the person inside, if you don't believe me just open the door, and you'll know when we come face to face."

The two men still stood their ground with solemn faces, and one peremptorily said, "I said you can't enter, so you can't enter!"

"What if I insist on going in?" Yang Chen smile immediately faded away, and a cold look took over.

A cold glint flashed through the man's eyes, he grimly laughed and said, "Then you can get the hell lost!"

As he said that, the man lifted his hand wanting to push Yang Chen away!

"Get lost your mother!"

Yang Chen was angered, he grabbed hold of the hand that closed-in on him, exerted some strength on it and directly made the man stumble by dragging his arm. With a *bang* the man crashed into the wall on the opposite side of the corridor!

The other man saw that Yang Chen had made his move, so he hastily brought out a knife and struck it towards Yang Chen's head!

Yang Chen didn't even look at the attack, he just moved at a quicker speed, directly smashing his knee against that man's abdomen like a hammer!

Like he received an electric shock, the man curled his body like a 'shrimp' and fell onto the ground, puking out all his stomach acids.

In a blink of an eye, of the two professional soldiers who were just treating Yang Chen with disdain, one was dizzy from crashing against the wall, and the other was spasming on the ground. They simply couldn't believe that as a member of the special forces their battle strength was so fragile!

Yang Chen adjusted his pants, and softly said, "Why would I(laozi) need to ask for your permission to see my woman? Retards."

As he said that, he quickly opened the ward's wooden door!

But right at the moment he opened it, Yang Chen's acute senses warned him of an incredibly imposing aura charging at him!

Yang Chen on instinct moved three inches to the left, with a whistling sound of something tearing through the air, a punch bore through the location he was at a moment ago!

Right at that moment, the fist that missed its target transformed into a claw and closed in on Yang Chen's neck!

In the narrow space, Yang Chen's footsteps suddenly drew a weird arc. As he dodged that claw, his body shifted behind the ambusher, he raised his leg and

was about to kick that person's butt!

But the ambusher's reaction speed and agility were also astonishing, in the instant where he about to be hit he quickly leaped away. As one of his foot landed on the ground, the other performed a sweep kick at Yang Chen!

Yang Chen already had an approximate grasp on this person's strength, he confirmed that this person was of no threat, and no longer bothered to dodge. He just lifted up one hand to protect his chest.....

Bang!

With a stifled sound like that of an explosion in the air, that leg was firmly blocked by Yang Chen. Yang Chen's body didn't move a single bit.

At this moment, he could finally see how his attacker looked, it was surprisingly an old man who wore a gray chang pao. He had average looks and grizzled hair.

Seeing that it was an old man, Yang Chen immediately shouted in irritation, "Hey old fella, I have no feuds with you, why are you trying to take my life with every move!?"

"Gray Robe, step down."

A thick and dignified voice came from the side close to the bed. The man who stood there looked slightly above fifty.

This man had a large build, he had a courageous face, well-developed muscular body, and jet black hair that was neatly combed to the back of his head. He wore a rarely seen dark-green chinese tunic suit, and his whole body emitted the meticulousness of someone high-ranking with a lofty and cold temperament.

The man addressed as Gray Robe looked strangely at Yang Chen, but obediently withdrew his leg. He then respectfully retreated to a corner.

Yang Chen turned around, and finally saw the worried Lin Ruoxi, who leaned against the bed unscathed.

Wearing a pure-white loose cotton pajamas, her head full of beautiful black hair was exceedingly attractive. She had a natural face with rosy cheeks and no makeup but looked as exquisite as carved jade, which matched well with the her smooth skin. She looked extremely tender and beautiful.

Two weeks of being nursed with Chinese medicine made the young beautiful CEO's beauty rise to a more breathtaking level. She was even more stunning than when Yang Chen first met her.

However, the Lin Ruoxi of this moment looked melancholic, as if she doesn't see a thing in front of her. Her eyes were slightly red, as if she had just cried moments ago, she apathetically stared out of the window, with coldness that would evoke pity.

"You, must be Yang Chen." The man in the chinese tunic suit asked in a deep voice.

Yang Chen had no idea what was going on, but it was obvious that his identity couldn't be low when he had an expert like the old gray-robed man as a subordinate. Yang Chen nodded, "You are....."

"I'm Ruoxi's grandfather, my name is Lin Zhiguo."

Lin Zhiguo? Lin Ruoxi's grandfather!?

Although this man did look rather aged, he didn't expect him to be Lin Ruoxi's grandfather!

Yang Chen even remembered that Cai Yan mentioned this person the last time she came by to the hospital, and he had been curious as to whether Lin Ruoxi actually had a grandfather. He didn't expect to meet him in person today.

"He's not!"

Suddenly, Lin Ruoxi turned back with red eyes, and stubbornly said to Yang Chen, "He's not my grandfather, I don't know him. Yang Chen quickly chase him away! I don't want to see him!"

This time, Yang Chen was stupefied. *What the hell is going on?*

Lin Zhiguo creased his eyebrows, and there was some sorrow in his eyes, he spoke in a grieved manner, "Ruoxi, do you hate your grandpa so much? To the point where you wouldn't even let grandpa visit you....."

"I'll say this once more, you're not my grandfather. Also, you've already seen me. You may leave now." Lin Ruoxi coldly said giving Lin Zhiguo nary a glance.

At this time, Gray Robe who stood at a corner tried to pacify her, "Miss, these

years have been hard on Master, he has always been concerned about you. When he heard that Miss had been hospitalized, and kept worrying about you. Everybody in the family was against Master coming to visit you, but Master still came despite the pressure from them. Miss, please don't blame Master..... Master has his own difficulties.....”

Lin Ruoxi sneered and said, “How could I dare blame the Lin Family head who holds great authority? Would you people please stop caring about an insignificant brat like me? I do not need your pity.”

Lin Zhiguo's expression changed greatly, he exhaled long and slowly, then nodded and said, “Alright Ruoxi, since you don't want grandpa to remain here, grandpa will leave. However.....” As he said that, Lin Zhiguo turned to look at Yang Chen who stood at a side who had a vacant expression of not knowing what to do. Lin Zhiguo said, “However, you're a person of our Lin Family, the most pure and noble Lin Family blood flows through your veins, I definitely wouldn't allow you to marry someone who originally sold mutton skewers for a living because of a moment of negligence!”

Yang Chen was pissed. *What the hell is this old man saying? What's wrong with selling mutton skewers? It's not like I'm selling myself as a male prostitute..... I sell mutton skewers and I'm proud of it!*

Besides, I personally went to the Civil Administration Bureau to get a marriage certificate, and even did the lovely thing of sharing a bed and a pillow.... Ehh.... although it was because we were both drunk and practically forgot it all, we're still a legally married couple aren't we? How can this be called a negligent marriage? It's not like this is some random marriage by bowing to the moon like in Wuxia films or one where they had a baby before getting married.

But Yang Chen didn't dare to say these words, they were grandfather and granddaughter after all. He was an outsider and a junior, so he could only with bear it.

“Based on what? I'll marry who I want to marry! I'm not a part of the Lin Family, I am who I am, I'm Lin Ruoxi. Other than this damned surname that I can't change, I don't have a single bit of relation to your Lin Family!” Lin Ruoxi became agitated, and unleashed her anger.

Lin Zhiguo's face frosted over, "You can choose to admit, and you can choose not to, but you still have to divorce! A Lin Family's daughter can only marry to a successful man, and not a mutton skewer peddler that has nothing! Such a joke must not appear in the Lin Family!"

"Joke?" Lin Ruoxi showed a grim smile that came from the bones, "Is the relationship between you and grandma also a joke?"

"Shut up!!...." Lin Zhiguo was angered to the core, like a lion that had his tail stepped on, he raised his hand with the intention of releasing a slap!

However, just as the palm was raised, Lin Zhiguo trembled all over, and slowly withdrew his hand with a complicated expression, he didn't proceed to slap. He sighed and said, "It was I who let your grandmother down, that's my biggest regret in this lifetime. Which is why I have to take good care of you, I will not let the Lin Family's bloodline mix with someone who sells mutton skewers....."

"It's my honor to tell you that it's too late....." Lin Ruoxi ridiculed with a smile. It was unknown whether she was ridiculing Lin Zhiguo or ridiculing herself.

Lin Zhiguo immediately widened his eyes, and looked at Yang Chen in a way as if he could shoot lightning out of his eyes, with a trembling voice he asked, "You..... what did you say..... you and him?"

"Why do you think I married him otherwise?" Lin Ruoxi restrained her laughter as she replied him with another question.

Yang Chen who stood at the side felt a little awkward, he wore a naive smile and rubbed his nose. *This woman is too much, discussing such a thing in front of her grandfather is so shameful! Doesn't she know that her husband is thin-skinned?*

But the others couldn't smile at all, it wasn't just Lin Zhiguo, even Gray Robe who stood at the side revealed a shocked expression and took a long time to return to his senses.

Lin Zhiguo fixed his gaze on Lin Ruoxi who refused to speak more, then raised his head to glance at Yang Chen and said, "I never thought that this would happen. However, Yang Chen I hope you won't do anything that lets Ruoxi down..... otherwise, I won't take things lying down."

Yang Chen finally heard a decent sentence towards himself, but instead felt a little distressed, “About that..... that has to depend on whether she’s willing to let me.”

“The Lin Family’s iron law, whether male or female, they can only have one mate in their lifetime. You must treat Ruoxi well, you have no other option!” Lin Zhiguo resolutely proclaimed.

“Erm.....” Yang Chen looked at Lin Ruoxi who maintained her silence, and suddenly understood something in a flash. *The true reason this woman married him is revealed, it seems like that contracted marriage matter was just an excuse! Because of some reason she refuses to admit she’s part of the Lin Family on the surface, but in actuality she still acts like one..... the way this matter is handled is too contradictory!*

Yang Chen felt incredibly conflicted in his heart, there wasn’t just one woman by his side, so he vaguely replied, “That is your family’s rule, it has no relation to me.”

Lin Zhiguo glared with flames in his eyes and said, “Don’t you dare think that I have no way of dealing with you just because you know some kung fu. If you dare do anything to harm Ruoxi, I’ll be the first to come for you!”

Lin Ruoxi on the bed coldly glanced at Yang Chen, “Yang Chen, don’t speak anymore, quickly make them leave.....”

“You don’t need to chase me, I’ll leave now.”

Lin Zhiguo stared at Yang Chen with a profound look, then left the ward along with Gray Robe. The two men who were knocked down on the floor hastily kept up with them while staggering, they didn’t want to stay for a moment longer.

All that was left in the room was the couple, they exchanged glances, but the atmosphere between them became rather weird.....

§

Publisher:

§

TooLate

From [doswap](#)

§